THE CONTINUUM LIMIT OF A FERMION SYSTEM INVOLVING NEUTRINOS: WEAK AND GRAVITATIONAL INTERACTIONS

FELIX FINSTER

NOVEMBER 2012 / SEPTEMBER 2014

Abstract. We analyze the causal action principle for a system of relativistic fermions composed of massive Dirac particles and neutrinos. In the continuum limit, we obtain an effective interaction described by a left-handed, massive SU(2) gauge field and a gravitational field. The off-diagonal gauge potentials involve a unitary mixing matrix, which is similar to the Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata matrix in the standard model.

Contents

1. Introduction 2
2. Regularizing the Neutrino Sector 4
   2.1. A Naive Regularization of the Neutrino Sector 5
   2.2. Instability of the Naively Regularized Neutrino Sector 6
   2.3. Regularizing the Vacuum Neutrino Sector – Introductory Discussion 8
   2.4. Ruling out the Chiral Neutrino Ansatz 13
   2.5. A Formalism for the Regularized Vacuum Fermionic Projector 15
   2.6. Interacting Systems, Regularization of the Light-Cone Expansion 17
   2.7. The ι-Formalism 21
3. The Euler-Lagrange Equations to Degree Five 24
   3.1. The Vacuum 24
   3.2. The Gauge Phases 26
4. The Euler-Lagrange Equations to Degree Four 32
   4.1. General Structural Results 32
   4.2. The Vacuum 35
   4.3. The Current and Mass Terms 36
   4.4. The Microlocal Chiral Transformation 39
   4.5. The Shear Contributions 47
   4.6. The Energy-Momentum Tensor and the Curvature Terms 50
5. Structural Contributions to the Euler-Lagrange Equations 54
   5.1. The Bilinear Logarithmic Terms 54
   5.2. The Field Tensor Terms 60
6. The Effective Action in the Continuum Limit 64
   6.1. Treating the Algebraic Constraints 64
   6.2. The Effective Dirac Action 68
6.3. Varying the Effective Dirac Action 66
7. The Field Equations for Chiral Gauge Fields 74
8. The Einstein Equations 77
Appendix A. The Regularized Causal Perturbation Theory with Neutrinos 80
1. Introduction

In [5] it was proposed to formulate physics based on a new action principle in space-time. In the paper [8], this action principle was worked out in detail in the so-called continuum limit for a simple model involving several generations of massive Dirac particles. In the present article, we extend this analysis to a model which includes neutrinos. In the continuum limit, we obtain an effective interaction described by a left-handed massive SU(2) gauge field and a gravitational field.

More specifically, we again consider the causal action principle introduced in [5]. Thus we define the causal Lagrangian by

\[ \mathcal{L}[A_{xy}] = |A_{xy}^2| - \frac{1}{8} |A_{xy}|^2, \] (1.1)

where \( A_{xy} = P(x, y) P(y, x) \) denotes the closed chain corresponding to the fermionic projector \( P(x, y) \), and \( |A| = \sum_{i=1}^{8} |\lambda_i| \) is the spectral weight (where \( \lambda_i \) are the eigenvalues of \( A \) counted with algebraic multiplicities). We introduce the action \( S \) and the constraint \( T \) by

\[ S[P] = \int\int_{M \times M} \mathcal{L}[A_{xy}] \, d^4x \, d^4y, \quad T[P] = \int\int_{M \times M} |A_{xy}|^2 \, d^4x \, d^4y, \]

where \( (M, \langle.,.\rangle) \) denotes Minkowski space. The causal action principle is to minimize \( S \) for fixed \( T \).

This action principle is given a rigorous meaning in [8, Section 2]. Every minimizer is a critical point of the so-called auxiliary action

\[ S_\mu[P] = \int\int_{M \times M} \mathcal{L}_\mu[A_{xy}] \, d^4x \, d^4y, \quad \mathcal{L}_\mu[A_{xy}] = |A_{xy}^2| - \mu |A_{xy}|^2, \] (1.3)

which involves a Lagrange multiplier \( \mu \in \mathbb{R} \).

We model the configuration of the fermions by a system consisting of a doublet of two sectors, each composed of three generations. Thus we describe the vacuum by the fermionic projector

\[ P(x, y) = P^N(x, y) \oplus P^C(x, y), \] (1.4)

where the charged sector \( P^C \) is formed exactly as the fermionic projector in [8] as a sum of Dirac seas, i.e.

\[ P^C(x, y) = \sum_{\beta=1}^{3} P_{m,\beta}(x, y), \] (1.5)
where \( m_\beta \) are the masses of the fermions and \( P_m \) is the distribution

\[
P_m(x, y) = \int \frac{d^4k}{(2\pi)^4} \left( \frac{k^0 + m}{2} \right) \delta(k^2 - m^2) \Theta(-k^0) e^{-ik(x-y)} . \tag{1.6}
\]

For the neutrino sector \( P^N \) we consider two different ansätze. The first ansatz of chiral neutrinos is to take a sum of left-handed, massless Dirac seas,

\[
P^N(x, y) = \sum_{\beta=1}^{3} \chi_L P_0(x, y) . \tag{1.7}
\]

The configuration of Dirac seas (1.4), (1.5) and (1.7) models precisely the leptons in the standard model. It was considered earlier in [5, §5.1]. The chiral ansatz (1.7) has the shortcoming that the neutrinos are necessarily massless, in contradiction to experimental observations. In order to describe massive neutrinos, we proceed as follows. As the mass mixes the left- and right-handed spinor components in the Dirac equation, for massive Dirac particles it is impossible to restrict attention to one chirality. This leads us to the ansatz of massive neutrinos

\[
P^N(x, y) = \sum_{\beta=1}^{3} P_{\tilde{m}_\beta}(x, y) . \tag{1.8}
\]

Here the neutrino masses \( \tilde{m}_\beta \geq 0 \) will in general be different from the masses \( m_\beta \) in the charged sector. Except for the different masses, the ansätze (1.5) and (1.8) are exactly the same. In particular, it might seem surprising that (1.8) does not distinguish the left- or right-handed component, in contrast to the observation that neutrinos are always left-handed. In order to obtain consistency with experiments, if working with (1.8) we need to make sure that the interaction distinguishes one chirality. For example, if we described massive neutrinos by (1.8) and found that the neutrinos only couple to left-handed gauge fields, then the right-handed neutrinos, although being present in (1.8), would not be observable. With this in mind, working with (1.8) seems a possible approach, provided that we find a way to break the chiral symmetry in the interaction. It is a major goal of this paper to work out how this can be accomplished.

Working out the continuum limit for the above systems gives the following results. First, we rule out the chiral ansatz (1.7) by showing that it does not admit a global minimizer of the causal action principle. Thus in the fermionic projector approach, we must necessarily work with the massive ansatz (1.8). We find that at least one of the neutrino masses \( \tilde{m}_\beta \) must be strictly positive. In order to break the chiral symmetry, we introduce additional right-handed states into the neutrino sector. It is a delicate question how this should be done. We discuss different approaches, in particular the so-called shear states and general surface states. The conclusion is that if the right-handed states and the regularization are introduced suitably, then the continuum limit is well-defined. Moreover, the structure of the effective interaction in the continuum limit is described as follows. The fermions satisfy the Dirac equation coupled to a left-handed SU(2)-gauge potential \( A_L \),

\[
\left[ i\partial + \chi_R \begin{pmatrix} \bar{A}_L^{11} & (A_L^{21} U_{MNS})^* \\ A_L^{21} U_{MNS} & -A_L^{11} \end{pmatrix} - mY \right] \Psi = 0 , \tag{1.9}
\]
where we used a block matrix notation (where the matrix entries are $3 \times 3$-matrices). Here $mY$ is a diagonal matrix composed of the fermion masses,

$$mY = \text{diag}(\tilde{m}_1, \tilde{m}_2, \tilde{m}_3, m_1, m_2, m_3),$$

and $U_{\text{MNS}}$ is a unitary $3 \times 3$-matrix. In analogy to the standard model, we refer to $U_{\text{MNS}}$ as the Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata (MNS) matrix. The gauge potentials $A_L$ satisfy a classical Yang-Mills-type equation, coupled to the fermions. More precisely, writing the isospin dependence of the gauge potentials according to

$$A_L^\alpha = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{3} A_L^\alpha \sigma^\alpha$$

in terms of Pauli matrices, we obtain the field equations

$$\partial^k (A_L^\alpha)^l - \Box (A_L^\alpha)^k M_\alpha^2 (A_L^\alpha)^k = c_\alpha \overline{\Psi} (\chi_L^\alpha \gamma^k \sigma^\alpha) \Psi,$$

valid for $\alpha = 1, 2, 3$. Here $M_\alpha$ are the bosonic masses and $c_\alpha$ the corresponding coupling constants. The masses and coupling constants of the two off-diagonal components are equal, i.e. $M_1 = M_2$ and $c_1 = c_2$, but they may be different from the mass and coupling constant of the diagonal component $\alpha = 3$.

Moreover, our model involves a gravitational field described by the Einstein equations

$$R_{jk} - \frac{1}{2} R g_{jk} + \Lambda g_{jk} = \kappa T_{jk},$$

where $R_{jk}$ denotes the Ricci tensor, $R$ is scalar curvature, and $T_{jk}$ is the energy-momentum tensor of the Dirac field. Moreover, $\kappa$ and $\Lambda$ denote the gravitational and the cosmological constants, respectively. We find that the gravitational constant scales like $\kappa \sim \delta^{-2}$, where $\delta$ is the length scale on which the shear and general surface states become relevant. The dynamics in the continuum limit is described by the coupled Dirac-Yang/Mills-Einstein equations (1.9), (1.10) and (1.11). These equations are of variational form, meaning that they can be recovered as Euler-Lagrange equations corresponding to an “effective action.” The effective continuum theory is manifestly covariant under general coordinate transformations.

For ease in notation, the field equations (1.10) (and similarly the Einstein equations (1.11)) were written only for one fermionic wave function $\Psi$. But clearly, the equations hold similarly for many-fermion systems (see Theorem 7.1). In this context, it is worth noting that, although the states of the Dirac sea are explicitly taken into account in our analysis, they do not enter the Einstein equations. Thus the naive “infinite negative energy density” of the sea drops out of the field equations, making it unnecessary to subtract any counter terms.

Similar as explained in [8] for an axial field, we again obtain corrections to the field equations which are nonlocal and violate causality in the sense that the future may influence the past. Moreover, for a given regularization one can compute the coupling constant, the bosonic mass, and the gravitational constant.

We note that in this paper, we restrict attention to explaining our computations and results; for all conceptual issues and more references we refer to [8] and the survey article [10].

2. Regularizing the Neutrino Sector

In this section, we explain how the neutrino sector is to be regularized. We begin in §2.1 by reviewing the regularization method used in [5]. Then we give an argument why this method is not sufficient for our purposes (see §2.2). This leads us to extending our methods (see §2.3), and we will explain why these methods only work for the ansatz of massive neutrinos (see §2.4). In §2.5 we introduce the resulting general
regularization scheme for the vacuum neutrino sector. In \[2.6\] we explain how to introduce an interaction, relying for the more technical aspects on Appendix \[A\]. Finally, in \[2.7\] we introduce a modification of the formalism of the continuum limit which makes some computations more transparent.

2.1. A Naive Regularization of the Neutrino Sector. As in \[8\], Section 3] we denote the regularized fermionic projector of the vacuum by \(P^\varepsilon\), where the parameter \(\varepsilon\) is the length scale of the regularization. This regularization length can be thought of as the Planck length, but it could be even smaller. Here we shall always assume that \(P^\varepsilon\) is homogeneous, meaning that it depends only on the difference vector \(\xi := y - x\). This is a natural physical assumption as the vacuum state should not distinguish a specific point in space-time. The simplest regularization method for the vacuum neutrino sector is to replace the above distribution \(P^N(x, y)\) (see (1.7)) by a function \(P^N_\varepsilon(x, y)\) which is again left-handed,

\[
P^N_\varepsilon(x, y) = \chi L g_j(\xi) \gamma^j.
\]

(2.1)

Such a regularization, in what follows referred to as a naive regularization, was used in \[5\] (see \[5\], eq. (5.3.1)). It has the effect that the corresponding closed chain vanishes due to so-called chiral cancellations (see \[5\], eq. 5.3.2),

\[
A^N_{xy} := P^N_\varepsilon(x, y) P^N_\varepsilon(y, x) = \chi L \slashed{g}(x, y) \chi L \slashed{g}(y, x) = \chi L \chi R \slashed{g}(x, y) \slashed{g}(y, x) = 0.
\]

Regularizing the charged sector as explained in \[5\], Chapter 4] or \[8\], the closed chain of the regularized fermionic projector \(P^\varepsilon\) of the whole system is of the form

\[
A_{xy} = P^\varepsilon(x, y) P^\varepsilon(y, x) = 0 \oplus A^C_{xy}.
\]

Hence the closed chain has the eigenvalue zero with multiplicity four as well as the non-trivial eigenvalues \(\lambda_+\) and \(\lambda_-\), both with multiplicity two (see \[5\], §5.3]). Let us recall from \[5\], Chapter 5] how by a specific choice of the Lagrange multiplier \(\mu\) we can arrange that the EL equations are satisfied: The operator \(Q\) corresponding to the action (1.3) is computed by (see \[5\], §3.5] or \[8\], Section 6)

\[
Q(x, y) = (-4\mu) \oplus \left[(1 - 4\mu) \sum_{s=\pm} \lambda_s F_s P(x, y). \right.
\]

In order for the operator \(Q\) to vanish on the charged sector, we must choose

\[
\mu = \frac{1}{4}.
\]

(2.2)

Then

\[
Q(x, y) = -\sum_{s=\pm} \lambda_s F_s P^N_\varepsilon(x, y) \oplus 0,
\]

and multiplying by \(P(y, z)\), we again get chiral cancellations to obtain

\[
Q(x, y) P(y, z) = -\sum_{s=\pm} \lambda_s F_s \chi L \slashed{g}(x, z) \chi L \slashed{g}(z, y) \oplus 0 = 0.
\]

Similarly, the pointwise product \(P(x, y) Q(y, z)\) also vanishes, showing that the EL equations \([P, Q]\) are indeed satisfied in the vacuum.

Before going on, we remark for clarity that in \[5\], the chiral regularization ansatz (2.1) was overridden on the large scale in order to arrange a suitable normalization of the chiral fermionic states (see \[5\], Appendix C]). More precisely, \(P^N_\varepsilon\) was constructed by projecting out half of the states of a Dirac sea of mass \(m\). The formula (2.1) was...
recovered in the limit $m \searrow 0$. In this so-called singular mass limit, the normalization integrals did not converge, making it possible to arrange a proper normalization, although for the limit (2.1) the normalization integral would vanish due to chiral cancellations. However, in [5, §C.1] it was explained that the formalism of the continuum limit is well-behaved in the singular mass limit, thus justifying why we were allowed to describe the regularized chiral Dirac seas by (2.1).

2.2. Instability of the Naively Regularized Neutrino Sector. We now give an argument which shows that if the neutrino sector is regularized in the neutrino sector according to (2.1), the system (1.4) cannot be an absolute minimum of the causal action principle (1.2). Suppose conversely that a fermionic projector $P^{\epsilon}$, which in the neutrino sector is regularized according to (2.1), is an absolute minimum of the action principle (1.2). Then any variation of the fermionic projector can only increase the action. Evaluating this condition for specific variations leads to the notion of state stability, which we now recall (for details see [5, §5.6] or [13]). This notion makes it necessary to assume that our regularization is macroscopic away from the light cone, meaning that the difference $P^{\epsilon}(x, y) - P(x, y)$ should be small pointwise except if the vector $y - x$ is close to the light cone (see [5, §5.6]). This condition seems to be fulfilled for any reasonable regularization, and thus we shall always assume it from now on. Suppose that the state $\Psi$ is occupied by a particle (i.e. that $\Psi$ lies in the image of the operator $P^{\epsilon}$), whereas the state $\Phi$ is not occupied. We assume that $\Psi$ and $\Phi$ are suitably normalized and negative definite with respect to the indefinite inner product

$$<\psi|\phi> = \int_M \overline{\psi}(x)\phi(x)\,d^4x.$$  

Then the ansatz

$$\delta P^{\epsilon}(x, y) = \Psi(x)\overline{\Psi}(y) - \Phi(x)\overline{\Phi}(y)$$  

describes an admissible perturbation of $P^{\epsilon}$. Since the number of occupied states is very large, $\delta P^{\epsilon}$ is a very small perturbation (which even becomes infinitesimally small in the infinite volume limit). Thus we may consider $\delta P$ as a first order variation and treat the constraint in (1.2) with a Lagrange multiplier. We point out that the set of possible variations $\delta P^{\epsilon}$ does not form a vector space, because it is restricted by additional conditions. This is seen most easily from the fact that $-\delta P^{\epsilon}$ is not an admissible variation, as it does not preserve the rank of $P^{\epsilon}$. The fact that possible variations $\delta P^{\epsilon}$ are restricted has the consequence that we merely get the variational inequality

$$S_\mu[P^{\epsilon} + \delta P^{\epsilon}] \geq S_\mu[P^{\epsilon}],$$  

valid for all admissible variations of the form (2.4).

Next, we consider variations which are homogeneous, meaning that $\Psi$ and $\Phi$ are plane waves of momenta $k$ respectively $q$,

$$\Psi(x) = \hat{\Psi}e^{-ikx}, \quad \Phi(x) = \hat{\Phi}e^{-iqx}.$$  

Then both $P^{\epsilon}$ and the variation $\delta P$ depend only on the difference vector $\xi = y - x$. Thus after carrying out one integral in (1.3), we obtain a constant, so that the second integral diverges. Thinking of the infinite volume limit of a system in finite 4-volume, we can remove this divergence simply by omitting the second integral. Then (2.5) simplifies to the state stability condition

$$\int_M \delta L_\mu[A(\xi)]\,d^4\xi \geq 0.$$  

(2.7)
In order to analyze state stability for our system (1.4), we first choose the Lagrange multiplier according to (2.2). Moreover, we assume that $\Psi$ is a state of the charged sector, whereas $\Phi$ is in the neutrino sector,

$$\hat{\Psi} = 0 \oplus \hat{\Psi}^C, \quad \hat{\Phi} = \hat{\Phi}^N \oplus 0. \quad (2.8)$$

Since $\Psi$ should be an occupied state, it must clearly be a solution of one of the Dirac equations $(i\partial - m_\alpha)\Psi = 0$ with $\alpha \in \{1, 2, 3\}$. The state $\Phi$, on the other hand, should be unoccupied; we assume for simplicity that its momentum $q$ is outside the support of $P^N_\varepsilon$,

$$q \not\in \text{supp } \hat{g} \quad (2.9)$$

(where $\hat{g}$ is the Fourier transform of the vector field $g$ in (2.1)). Thus our variation removes a state from a Dirac sea in the charged sector and occupies instead an unoccupied state in the neutrino sector with arbitrary momentum $q$ (in particular, $\Phi$ does not need to satisfy any Dirac equation). Let us compute the corresponding variation of the Lagrangian. First, using that the spectral weight is additive on direct sums, we find that

$$\delta L_\frac{1}{4} = \delta \left( |A^C|^2 - \frac{1}{4} |A|^2 \right) = \delta |A^C|^2 - \frac{1}{2} |A| \delta |A| = \delta |(A^C)^2| + \delta |(A^N)^2| - \frac{1}{2} (|A^C| + |A^N|) \left( \delta |A^C| + \delta |A^N| \right). \quad (2.10)$$

This formula simplifies if we use that $A^N$ vanishes due to chiral cancellations. Moreover, the first order variation of $(A^N)^2$ vanishes because

$$\delta (|A^N|^2) = (\delta A^N)A^N + A^N(\delta A^N) = 0.$$

Finally, $\delta |A^N| = |(A^N + \delta A^N)| - |A^N| = |\delta A^N|$. This gives

$$\delta L_\frac{1}{4} = \delta \left( |(A^C)|^2 - \frac{1}{4} |A^C|^2 \right) - \frac{1}{2} |A^C| |\delta A^N|. \quad (2.10)$$

Note that $\Psi$ only affects the first term, whereas $\Phi$ influences only the second term. In the first term the neutrino sector does not appear, and thus the state stability analysis for one sector as carried out in [5, §5.6] and [13] applies. From this analysis, we know that the charged sector should be regularized in compliance with the condition of a distributional $\mathcal{MP}$-product (see also [7]). Then the first term in (2.10) leads to a finite variation of our action. The point is that the second term in (2.10) is negative. In the next lemma we show that it is even unbounded below, proving that our system indeed violates the state stability condition (2.7).

**Lemma 2.1.** Suppose that $P^\varepsilon$ is a regularization of the distribution (1.4) which is macroscopic away from the light cone and which in the neutrino sector is of the form (2.1). Then for any constant $C > 0$ there is a properly normalized, negative definite wave function $\Phi$ satisfying (2.6), (2.8) and (2.9) such that the corresponding variation of the fermionic projector

$$\delta P^\varepsilon(x, y) = -\Phi(x)\overline{\Phi(y)} \quad (2.11)$$

satisfies the inequality

$$\int_M |A^C| |\delta A^N| \, d^4\xi > C.$$
Proof. For convenience, we occupy two fermionic states of the same momentum \( q \) such that
\[
\delta P^N(x, y) = (\not{p} + m) e^{-iq(y-x)},
\]
where \( p \) is a vector on the lower hyperboloid \( \mathcal{H}_m := \{ p \mid p^2 = m^2 \text{ and } p^0 < 0 \} \), and \( m \) is a positive parameter which involves the normalization constant. For this simple ansatz one easily verifies that the image of \( \delta P^N \) is indeed two-dimensional and negative definite. By occupying the two states in two separate steps, one can decompose (2.12) into two variations of the required form (2.11). Therefore, it suffices to prove the lemma for the variation (2.12).

Using (2.1) and (2.12), the variation of \( A^N \) is computed to be
\[
\delta A^N = \chi_L \not{g}(x,y)(\not{p} + m) e^{iq\xi} + \chi_R (\not{p} + m) \not{g}(y,x) e^{-iq\xi}.
\]
To simplify the notation, we omit the arguments \( x \) and \( y \) and write \( g(\xi) = g(x,y) \). Then \( g \) is a complex vector field with \( g(\xi) = g(y,x) \). Using that our regularization is macroscopic away from the light cone, there clearly is a set \( \Omega \subset M \) of positive Lebesgue measure such that both the vector field \( g \) and the function \( |A^C| \) are non-zero for all \( \xi \in \Omega \). Then we can choose a past directed null vector \( n \) such that \( \langle n, g \rangle \) is non-zero on a set \( \Omega' \subset \Omega \) again of positive measure. We now consider a sequence of vectors \( p_l \in \mathcal{H}_m \) which converge to the ray \( \mathbb{R}^+ \mathbf{n} \) in the sense that there are coefficients \( c_l \) with
\[
p_l - c_l \mathbf{n} \to 0 \quad \text{and} \quad c_l \to \infty.
\]
Then on \( \Omega' \), the inner product \( \langle p_l, g \rangle \) diverges as \( l \to \infty \). A short computation shows that in this limit, the eigenvalues of the matrix \( \delta A^N_l \) also diverge. Computing these eigenvalues asymptotically, one finds that
\[
|\delta A^N_l| \geq 4 |\langle p_l, g \rangle| + O(l^0).
\]
Hence for large \( l \),
\[
\int_M |A^C| |\delta A^N| \geq \int_{\Omega'} |A^C| |\langle p_l, g \rangle| \xrightarrow{l \to \infty} \infty,
\]
completing the proof.

It is remarkable that the above argument applies independent of any regularization details. We learn that regularizing the neutrino sector by a left-handed function (2.1) necessarily leads to an instability of the vacuum. The only way to avoid this instability is to consider more general regularizations where \( P^N_e \) also involves a right-handed component.

2.3. Regularizing the Vacuum Neutrino Sector – Introductory Discussion.

We begin by explaining our regularization method for one massless left-handed Dirac sea,
\[
P(x,y) = \chi_L P_0(x,y)
\]
(several seas and massive neutrinos will be considered later in this section). Working with a left-handed Dirac sea is motivated by the fact that right-handed neutrinos have never been observed in nature. To be precise, this physical observation only tells us that there should be no right-handed neutrinos in the low-energy regime. However, on the regularization scale \( \varepsilon^{-1} \), which is at least as large as the Planck energy \( E_P \)
and therefore clearly inaccessible to experiments, there might well be right-handed neutrinos. Thus it seems physically admissible to regularize $P$ by

$$P^\varepsilon(x, y) = \chi_L \hat{g}_L(x, y) + \chi_R \hat{g}_R(x, y),$$

provided that the Fourier transform $\hat{g}_R(k)$ vanishes if $|k^0| + |\vec{k}| \ll \varepsilon^{-1}$.

In order to explain the effect of such a right-handed high-energy component, we begin with the simplest example where $\hat{g}_R$ is supported on the lower mass cone,

$$\hat{g}_R(k) = \frac{8\pi^2}{(2\pi)^4} k \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(k^2) e^{ik\xi},$$

where $\omega \equiv k^0$, and the non-negative function $\hat{h}$ is supported in the high-energy region $\omega \sim \varepsilon^{-1}$ (see Figure 1 (A)). We compute the Fourier integrals by

$$\hat{g}_R(\xi) = 8\pi^2 \int \frac{d^4k}{(2\pi)^4} k \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(k^2) e^{ik\xi} = -8i\pi^2 \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi} \int \frac{d^4k}{(2\pi)^4} \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(k^2) e^{ik\xi},$$

where we set $t = \xi^0$, $r = |\vec{\xi}|$ and chose polar coordinates $(p = |\vec{k}|, \vartheta, \varphi)$. This gives the simple formula

$$\hat{g}_R(\xi) = -\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi} \frac{h(t - r) - h(t + r)}{r},$$

where $h$ is the one-dimensional Fourier transform of $\hat{h}$. Under the natural assumption that the derivatives of $\hat{h}$ scale in powers of $\varepsilon$, the function $h$ decays rapidly on the regularization scale. Then $\hat{g}_R$ vanishes except if $\xi$ is close to the light cone, so that the regularization is again macroscopic away from the light cone. But the contribution (2.14) does affect the singularities on the light cone, and it is thus of importance in the continuum limit. More specifically, on the upper light cone away from the origin $t \approx r \gg \varepsilon$, we obtain the contribution

$$\hat{g}_R(\xi) = -\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi} \frac{h(t - r)}{r} = -(\gamma^0 - \gamma^r) \frac{h(t - r)}{r} + \gamma^r \frac{h(t - r)}{r^2} + (\text{rapid decay in } r),$$

(2.15)
where we set \( \gamma^r = (\vec{\xi} \vec{\gamma}) / r \). This contribution is compatible with the formalism of the continuum limit, because it has a similar structure and the same scaling as corresponding contributions by a regularized Dirac sea (see [7], where the same notation and sign conventions are used).

Regularizing the neutrino sector of our fermionic projector (1.4) using a right-handed high-energy component has the consequence that no chiral cancellations occur. Hence the EL equations become

\[
\sum_i \left( |\lambda_i| - \mu \sum_l |\lambda_l| \right) \frac{\lambda_i}{|\lambda_i|} F_i P(x, y) = 0,
\]

where \( i \) labels the eigenvalues of \( A_{xy} \). For these equations to be satisfied, we must choose

\[
\mu = \frac{1}{8},
\]

and furthermore we must impose that the eigenvalues of \( A_{xy} \) all have the same absolute values in the sense that

\[
(|\lambda_i| - |\lambda_j|) \frac{\lambda_i}{|\lambda_i|} F_i P(x, y) = 0 \quad \text{for all } i, j.
\]

In simple terms, the matrix \( A^N \) must have the same spectral properties as \( A^C \).

This consideration points to a shortcoming of the regularization (2.14). Namely, the expression (2.15) does not involve a mass parameter, and thus the corresponding contribution to the closed chain \( A^N \) cannot have the same spectral properties as \( A^C \), which has a non-trivial mass expansion. A possible solution to this problem is to consider states on a more general hypersurface, as we now explain again in the example of a spherically symmetric regularization. We choose

\[
\hat{g} / R(k) = -4\pi^2 (\gamma^0 + \gamma^k) \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(|\vec{k}| - K(\omega)),
\]

where \( \gamma^k = \vec{k} \vec{\gamma} / k \), and \( h \) is chosen as in (2.14). We again assume that \( \hat{g} \) is supported in the high-energy region, meaning that

\[
\hat{h}(\omega) = 0 \quad \text{if } |\omega| \ll \varepsilon^{-1}.
\]

Setting \( K = -\omega \), we get back to (2.14); but now the function \( K \) gives a more general dispersion relation (see Figure 1 (B)). Carrying out the Fourier integrals, we obtain

\[
\hat{g}^0_R(\xi) = -4\pi^2 \int \frac{d^4 k}{(2\pi)^4} \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(|\vec{k}| - K(\omega)) e^{i k \xi}
\]

\[
= -\int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} \hat{h}(\omega) e^{i\omega t} \int_0^\infty p^2 dp \delta(p - K(\omega)) \int_{-1}^{1} d\cos \vartheta \ e^{-ipr \cos \vartheta}
\]

\[
= -\frac{i}{r} \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} \hat{h}(\omega) e^{i\omega t} \int_0^\infty p \ dp \delta(p - K(\omega)) (e^{-ipr} - e^{ipr})
\]

\[
= \frac{i}{r} \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} \hat{h}(\omega) K(\omega) e^{i\omega t} \left( e^{iKr} - e^{-iKr} \right)
\]

\[
(\vec{\gamma} \hat{g}_R)(\xi) = -4\pi^2 (i \vec{\gamma} \vec{\nabla}) \int \frac{d^4 k}{(2\pi)^4} \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(k - K(\omega)) \frac{1}{|\vec{k}|} e^{i k \xi}
\]

\[
= -\vec{\gamma} \left[ \frac{1}{r} \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} \hat{h}(\omega) e^{i\omega t} \left( e^{iKr} - e^{-iKr} \right) \right].
\]
\[ \frac{i}{r} \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} \hat{h}(\omega) K(\omega) e^{i\omega t} \left( e^{iKr} + e^{-iKr} \right) \]
\[ + \frac{\gamma^r}{r^2} \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} \hat{h}(\omega) e^{i\omega t} \left( e^{iK} - e^{-iKr} \right). \]

Evaluating as in (2.15) on the upper light cone away from the origin, we conclude that
\[ \mathcal{g}_R(\xi) = \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} e^{i(\omega + Kr)} \hat{h}(\omega) \left( i \frac{\gamma^0 - \gamma^r}{r} K(\omega) + \frac{\gamma^r}{r^2} \right) e^{i(\omega t + Kr)} \]
\[ + (\text{rapid decay in } r). \]

For ease in notation, from now on we will omit the rapidly decaying error term. Rearranging the exponentials, we obtain
\[ \mathcal{g}_R(\xi) = \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} e^{i(\omega + K)r} \hat{h}(\omega) \left( i \frac{\gamma^0 - \gamma^r}{r} K(\omega) + \frac{\gamma^r}{r^2} \right) e^{i(\omega t - r)}. \]

Now the mass expansion can be performed by expanding the factor \( \exp(i(\omega + K)r) \),
\[ \mathcal{g}_R(\xi) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(ir)^n}{n!} \int_{-\infty}^{0} \frac{d\omega}{2\pi} h(\omega + K)^n \left( i \frac{\gamma^0 - \gamma^r}{r} K(\omega) + \frac{\gamma^r}{r^2} \right) e^{i(\omega t - r)}. \]

We conclude that the general ansatz (2.18) gives rise to a mass expansion which is similar to that for a massive Dirac sea (see [5, Chapter 4]). By modifying the geometry of the hypersurface \( \{ |\vec{k}| = K(\omega) \} \), we have a lot of freedom to modify the contributions to the mass expansion. We point out that, in contrast to the mass expansion for a massive Dirac sea, the mass expansion in (2.20) involves no logarithmic poles. This is because here we only consider high-energy states (2.19), whereas the logarithmic poles are a consequence of the low-frequency behavior of the massive Dirac seas (for details see the discussion of the logarithmic mass problem in [5, §2.5 and §4.3]).

We now come to another regularization effect. The regularizations (2.14) and (2.18) considered so far have the property that \( \mathcal{g}_R \) is a multiple of the matrix \( \chi_L(\gamma^0 + \gamma^r) \), as is indicated in Figure (1) (B) by the arrows (to avoid confusion with the signs, we note that on the lower mass shell, \( \gamma^r = \omega^0 - \vec{k}\gamma = \omega (\gamma^0 + \gamma^r) \)). Clearly, we could also have flipped the sign of \( \gamma^r \), i.e. instead of (2.18),
\[ \mathcal{g}_R(k) = -4\pi^2 (\gamma^0 - \gamma^r) \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(|\vec{k}| - K(\omega)) \]
(see Figure (1) (C)). In order to explain the consequence of this sign change in the simplest possible case, we consider the two functions
\[ \mathcal{g}_\pm(k) = 8\pi^2 \omega (\gamma^0 \pm \gamma^r) \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(k^2), \]
whose Fourier transforms are given in analogy to (2.15) on the upper light cone by
\[ \mathcal{g}_\pm(\xi) = -(\gamma^0 \mp \gamma^r) \frac{h'(t - r)}{r} \mp \gamma^r \frac{h(t - r)}{r^2} \]
\[ \times \hat{h}(\omega) \delta(|\vec{k}| - K(\omega)). \]

When multiplying \( \mathcal{g}_\pm \) by itself, the identity \( (\gamma^0 + \gamma^r)^2 = 0 \) gives rise to a cancellation. For example, in the expression
\[ \frac{1}{4} \text{Tr} \left( \mathcal{g}_+(\xi) \mathcal{g}_+(\xi)^* \right) = 2\text{Re} \left( \frac{h'(t - r) h(t - r)}{r^3} \right) - \frac{|h(t - r)|^2}{r^4} \]
(2.23).
the term $\sim r^{-2}$ has dropped out. The situation is different if we multiply $\gamma_+\gamma_{-}$ by $\gamma_{-}$.

For example, in

$$
\frac{1}{4} \text{Tr} (\gamma_{+} (\xi) \gamma_{-} (\xi^{*})^*) = 2 \frac{|h'(t-r)|^2}{r^2} - 2i \frac{\text{Im}(h'(t-r)h(t-r))}{r^3} + \frac{|h(t-r)|^2}{r^4}
$$

no cancellation occurs, so that the term $\sim r^{-2}$ is present. From this consideration we learn that by flipping the sign of $\gamma^{-}$ as in (2.21), we can generate terms in the closed chain which have a different scaling behavior in the radius.

In order to clarify the last construction, it is helpful to describe the situation in terms of the general notions introduced in [5, §4.4]. The fact that the leading term in (2.15) is proportional to $(\gamma^0 - \gamma^{-})$ can be expressed by saying that the vector component is null on the light cone. When forming the closed chain, the term quadratic in the leading terms drops out, implying that $A_{xy} \sim r^{-3}$. In momentum space, this situation corresponds to the fact that the vector $\hat{\gamma}(k)$ points almost in the same direction as $k$. In other words, the shear of the surface states is small. Thus in (2.14) and (2.18) as well as in $g_{+}$, the shear is small, implying that the vector component is null on the light cone, explaining the cancellation of the term $\sim r^{-2}$ in (2.21). The states in (2.21) and $g_{-}$, however, have a large shear. Thus the corresponding vector component is not null on the light cone, explaining the term $\sim r^{-2}$ in (2.24). We point out that states of large shear have never been considered before, as in [5] we always assumed the shear to be small. For simplicity, we refer to the states in (2.21) and $g_{-}$ as shear states.

We next outline how the above considerations can be adapted to the general ansätze (1.7) and (1.8). In order to describe several chiral Dirac seas, one simply adds regularized Dirac seas, each of which might involve a right-handed high-energy component and/or shear states. In other words, in the chiral ansatz (1.7) one replaces each summand by a Dirac sea regularized as described above. In the massive ansatz (1.8), we regularize every massive Dirac sea exactly as described in [5, Chapter 4]. Moreover, in order to distinguish the neutrino sector from a massive sector, we add one or several right-handed high-energy contributions. In this way, the regularization breaks the chiral symmetry.

We finally make a few remarks which clarify our considerations and bring them into the context of previous work.

**Remark 2.2.** (1) We point out that the above assumption of spherical symmetry was merely a technical simplification. But this assumption is not crucial for the arguments, and indeed it will be relaxed in (2.5). We also point out that in all previous regularizations, the occupied states formed a hypersurface in momentum space. In this paper, we will always restrict attention to such surface states (see [5, §4.3]). The underlying guiding principle is that one should try to build up the regularized fermionic projector with as few occupied states as possible. This can be understood from the general framework of causal variational principles as introduced in [6, 9]. Namely, in this framework the minimum of the action decreases if the number of particles gets larger.\footnote{To be precise, this results holds for operators in the class $P^f$ (see [6, Def. 2.7]) if the fermionic operator is rescaled such that its trace is independent of $f$. In the formulation with local correlation matrices (see [9, Section 3.2]) and under the trace constraint, the canonical embedding $C^f \hookrightarrow C^{f+1}$ allows one to regard a system of $f$ particles as a special system of $f+1$ particles. Since varying within the set of $f+1$-particle systems gives more freedom, it is obvious that the action decreases if $f$ gets larger.}
to construct minimizers, one should always keep the number of particles fixed. Conversely, one could also construct minimizers by keeping the action fixed and decreasing the number of particles. With this in mind, a regularization involving fewer particles corresponds to a smaller action and is thus preferable.

(2) It is worth mentioning that in all the above regularizations we worked with null states, meaning that for every $k$, the image of the operator $\hat{P}(k)$ is null with respect to the spin scalar product. Such null states can be obtained from properly normalized negative definite states by taking a singular mass limit, similar as worked out in [5, Appendix C].

(3) At first sight, our procedure for regularizing might seem very special and ad-hoc. However, it catches all essential effects of more general regularizations, as we now outline. First, states of large shear could be used just as well for the regularization of massive Dirac seas, also in the charged sector. However, our analysis in Section 6 will reveal that the EL equations will only involve the difference in the regularization used in the charged sector compared to that in the neutrino sector. Thus it is no loss of generality to regularize the charged sector simply according to [5, Chapter 4], and to account for shear states only in the neutrino sector. Next, in the high-energy region one could also work with massive states. In order to break the chiral symmetry, one could project out one spin state with the ansatz

$$\hat{g}(p) = \frac{1}{2} (1 - \rho \hat{g}) (\hat{k} + m) \hat{h}(k)$$

(2.25)

with $p^2 = m^2, q^2 = -1$ and $\langle q, k \rangle = 0$ (see [5, eq. (C.1.5)], where a corresponding Dirac sea is considered before taking the singular mass limit). However, this procedure would have two disadvantages. First, massive states would yield additional contributions to the fermionic projector, whereas (2.25) even gives rise to bilinear and pseudoscalar contributions, which would all cause technical complications. Secondly, massive states involve both left- and right-handed components, which are coupled together in such a way that it would be more difficult to introduce a general interaction. Apart from these disadvantages, working with massive states does not seem to lead to any interesting effects. This is why we decided not to consider them in this paper.

(4) We mention that for a fully convincing justification of the vacuum fermionic projector (1.4) and of our regularization method, one should extend the state stability analysis from [13] to a system of a charged sector and a neutrino sector. Since this analysis only takes into account the behavior of the fermionic projector away from the light cone, the high-energy behavior of $P^e$ plays no role, so that one could simply work with the explicit formula for the unregularized fermionic projector (1.4). Then the methods of [13] apply to each of the sectors. However, the two sectors are coupled by the term $|\mathcal{A}|^2$ in the Lagrangian. The results of this analysis will depend on the value of the Lagrange multiplier (2.17) as well as on the choice of all lepton masses (including the neutrino masses). Clearly, the details of this analysis are too involved for predicting results. For the moment, all one can say is that there is no general counter argument (in the spirit of (2.2)) which might prevent state stability.

2.4. Ruling out the Chiral Neutrino Ansatz. In this section, we give an argument which shows that for chiral neutrinos there is no regularization which gives rise to a
stable minimum of the causal action principle. More precisely, we will show that even taking into account the regularization effects discussed in the previous section, it is impossible to arrange that the vacuum satisfies the EL equations in the continuum limit (2.16) and (2.17). Our argument applies in such generality (i.e. without any specific assumptions on the regularization) that it will lead us to drop the ansatz of chiral neutrinos (1.7), leaving us with the ansatz of massive neutrinos (1.8).

Considering massive neutrinos is clearly consistent with the experimental observation of neutrino oscillations. Based on these experimental findings, we could also have restricted attention to the ansatz (1.8) right away. On the other hand, considering also chiral neutrinos (1.7) has the advantage that we can conclude that massive neutrinos are needed even for mathematical consistency. This conclusion is of particular interest because in the neutrino experiments, the mass of the neutrinos is observed indirectly from the fact that different generations of neutrinos are converted into each other. This leaves the possibility that neutrinos might be massless, and that the neutrino oscillations can be explained instead by modifying the weak interaction. The following argument rules out this possibility by giving an independent reason why there must be massive neutrinos.

Recall that the Dirac seas in the charged sector $\mathcal{P}^C$, (1.5), can be written as

$$P_m(x, y) = (i\bar{\gamma}_x + m) T_{m^2}(x, y),$$

where $T_{m^2}$ is the Fourier transform of the lower mass shell,

$$T_{m^2}(x, y) = \int \frac{d^4k}{(2\pi)^4} \delta(k^2 - m^2) \Theta(-k^0) e^{-ik(x-y)}.$$

Computing this Fourier integral and expanding the resulting Bessel functions gives the expansion in position space

$$T_{m^2}(x, y) = -\frac{1}{8\pi^3} \left[ PP_{\xi^2} + i\pi \delta(\xi^2) \varepsilon(\xi^0) \right] + \frac{m^2}{32\pi^3} \left( \log |m^2\xi^2| + c + i\pi \Theta(\xi^2) \varepsilon(\xi^0) \right) + O(\xi^2 \log(\xi^2)).$$

(see [5, §2.5] or [8, §4.4]). The point for what follows is that the light-cone expansion of $P_m(x, y)$ involves a logarithmic pole $\sim \log(\xi^2)$. As a consequence, in the EL equations (2.16) we get contributions to (2.16) which involve the logarithm of the radius $|\vec{x} - \vec{y}|$ (for details see [8, §§5.1] or the weak evaluation formula (2.31) below). In order to satisfy the EL equations, these logarithmic contributions in the charged sector must be compensated by corresponding logarithmic contributions in the neutrino sector.

Now assume that we consider the chiral neutrino ansatz (1.7). Then the light-cone expansion of $T_N$ does not involve logarithmic poles (indeed, the distribution $P_0$ can be given explicitly in position space by taking the limit $m \downarrow 0$ in (2.26) and (2.27)). Thus the logarithmic contributions in the radius must come from the high-energy component to the fermionic projector. However, as one sees explicitly from the formulas (2.20) and (2.22), the high-energy component is a Laurent series in the radius and does not involve any logarithms. This explains why with chiral neutrinos alone it is impossible to satisfy the EL equations.

This problem can also be understood in more general terms as follows. The logarithmic poles of $P_m(x, y)$ are an infrared effect related to the fact that the square root is not an analytic function (see the discussion of the so-called logarithmic mass
problem in [5 §2.5 and §4.5]). Thus in order to arrange logarithmic contributions in the high-energy region, one would have to work with states on a surface with a singularity. Then the logarithm in the radius would show up in the next-to-leading order on the light cone. Thus in order to compensate the logarithms in (2.27), the contribution by the high-energy states would be just as singular on the light cone as the contribution by the highest pole in (2.27). Apart from the fact that it seems difficult to construct such high-energy contributions, such constructions could no longer be regarded as regularizations of Dirac sea structures. Instead, one would have to put in specific additional structures ad hoc, in contrast to the concept behind the method of variable regularization (see [5 §4.1]).

The above arguments show that at least one generation of neutrinos must be massive. In particular, we must give up the ansatz (1.7) of chiral neutrinos. Instead, we shall always work with massive neutrinos (1.8), and we need to assume that at least one of the masses $\tilde{m}_\beta$ is non-zero.

For clarity, we finally remark that our arguments also leave the possibility to choose another ansatz which involves a combination of both chiral and massive neutrinos, i.e.

$$P^N(x, y) = \sum_{\beta=1}^{\beta_0} \chi_L P_0(x, y) + \sum_{\beta=\beta_0+1}^3 P_{m_\beta}(x, y) \quad \text{with} \quad \beta_0 \in \{1, 2\}. \quad (2.28)$$

The only reason why we do not consider this ansatz here is that it seems more natural to describe all neutrino generations in the same way. All our methods could be extended in a straightforward way to the ansatz (2.28).

2.5. A Formalism for the Regularized Vacuum Fermionic Projector. In the following sections §2.5 and §2.6 we incorporate the regularization effects discussed in §2.3 to the formalism of the continuum limit. Beginning with the vacuum, we recall that in [5 §4.5] we described the regularization by complex factors $T^{(n)}_{[p]}$ and $T^{(n)}_{\{p\}}$ (see also [8 §5.1]). The upper index $n$ tells about the order of the singularity on the light cone, whereas the lower index keeps track of the orders in a mass expansion. In §2.3 we considered a chiral decomposition (2.13) and chose the left- and right-handed components independently. This can be indicated in our formalism by a chiral index $c \in \{L, R\}$, which we insert into the subscript. Thus we write the regularization (2.13) and (2.14) symbolically as

$$P^c(x, y) = \frac{i}{2} \left( \chi_L \xi T^{(-1)}_{[L,0]} + \chi_R \xi T^{(-1)}_{[R,0]} \right).$$

If the regularization effects of the previous section are not used in the left- or right-handed component, we simply omit the chiral index. Thus if we work with general surface states or shear states only in the right-handed component, we leave out the left-handed chiral index,

$$P^c(x, y) = \frac{i}{2} \left( \chi_L \xi T^{(-1)}_{[0]} + \chi_R \xi T^{(-1)}_{[R,0]} \right).$$

When using the same notation as in the charged sector, we always indicate that we assume the corresponding regularizations to be compatible. Thus for factors $T_0^{(n)}$ without a chiral index, we shall use the same calculation rules in the neutrino and in the charged sector. This will also make it possible to introduce an interaction between
these sectors (for details see \[2.6\] and Appendix \[A\]). If we consider a sector of massive neutrinos \((1.8)\), we first perform the mass expansion of every Dirac sea

\[
P_m^\varepsilon = \frac{i\varepsilon}{2} \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{m^{2n}}{n!} T^{(-1+n)}_{[2n]} + \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{m^{2n+1}}{n!} T^{(n)}_{[2n+1]} \tag{2.29}
\]

and then add the chiral index to the massless component,

\[
P_m^\varepsilon (x, y) = \frac{i}{2} \left( \chi_L T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \chi_R T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \right) + \frac{i\varepsilon}{2} \sum_{n=1}^\infty \frac{m^{2n}}{n!} T^{(-1+n)}_{[2n]} + \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{m^{2n+1}}{n!} T^{(n)}_{[2n+1]} \tag{2.30}
\]

Now the regularization effects of the previous section can be incorporated by introducing more general factors \(T_{[c,p]}^{(n)}\) and \(T_{[c,p]}^{(n)}\) and by imposing suitable computation rules. Before beginning, we point out that the more general factors should all comply with our weak evaluation rule

\[
\int_{|\xi| - \varepsilon}^{|\xi| + \varepsilon} \left| t \eta(t, \xi) \right| T_{c,\xi}^{(a_1)} \cdots T_{c,\xi}^{(a_n)} T_{R,\xi}^{(b_1)} \cdots T_{R,\xi}^{(b_n)} \right| = \eta(|\xi|, \xi) c_{\text{reg}} \frac{\log (\varepsilon / |\xi|)}{(\varepsilon / |\xi|)^L} \tag{2.31}
\]

which holds up to

\[\text{(higher orders in } \varepsilon / \ell_{\text{macro}} \text{ and } \varepsilon / |\xi|)\].

Here \(L\) is the degree defined by \(\deg T_{[c,\xi]}^{(n)} = 1 - n\), and \(c_{\text{reg}}\) is a so-called \textit{regularization parameter} (for details see again \[5\ §4.5\] or \[8\ §5.1\]). The quotient of products of factors \(T_{c,\xi}^{(n)}\) and \(T_{R,\xi}^{(n)}\) in (2.31) is referred to as a \textit{simple fraction}. In order to take into account the mass expansion (2.20), we replace every factor \(T_{[c,\xi]}^{(-1)}\) by the formal series

\[
\sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{1}{n!} \frac{1}{\delta^{2n}} T_{[c,2n]}^{(-1+n)} \tag{2.33}
\]

This notation has the advantage that it resembles the even part of the standard mass expansion (2.29). In order to get the scaling dimensions right, we inserted a factor \(\delta^{-2n}\), where the parameter \(\delta\) has the dimension of a length. The scaling of \(\delta\) will be specified later (see (4.19), (4.6) and Section \[8\]). For the moment, in order to make sense of the mass expansion, we only need to assume that the

\[
\text{length scale } \delta \gg \varepsilon. \tag{2.34}
\]

But \(\delta\) could be much smaller than the Compton wave length of the fermions of the system. It could even be on the same scale as the regularization length \(\varepsilon\). We thus replace (2.30) by

\[
P_m^\varepsilon (x, y) = \chi_L \frac{i\varepsilon}{2} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \chi_R \frac{i\varepsilon}{2} \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{1}{n!} \frac{1}{\delta^{2n}} T_{[R,2n]}^{(-1+n)} + \frac{i\varepsilon}{2} \sum_{n=1}^\infty \frac{m^{2n}}{n!} T_{[2n]}^{(-1+n)} + \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{m^{2n+1}}{n!} T_{[2n+1]}^{(n)} \tag{2.35}
\]
The effect of large shear can be incorporated in our contraction rules, as we now explain. Recall that our usual contraction rules read

\[
\langle \xi_{[p]}^{(n)} \rangle_j \langle \xi_{[p']}^{(n')} \rangle_j = \frac{1}{2} \left( z_{[p]}^{(n)} + z_{[p']}^{(n')} \right) + \text{(higher orders in } \varepsilon / |\vec{\xi}|) \quad (2.36)
\]

\[
z_{[p]}^{(n)} T_{[p]}^{(n)} = -4 \left( n T_{[p]}^{(n+1)} + T_{[p]}^{(n+2)} \right) \quad (2.37)
\]

(and similarly for the complex conjugates, cf. [5, §4.5] or [8, §5.1]). We extend the first rule in the obvious way by inserting lower chiral indices. In the second rule we insert a factor $\delta^{-2}$,

\[
z_{[c,p]}^{(n)} T_{[c,p]}^{(n)} = -4 \left( n T_{[c,p]}^{(n+1)} + \frac{1}{\delta^2} T_{[c,p]}^{(n+2)} \right). \quad (2.38)
\]

The factor $\delta^{-2}$ has the advantage that it ensures that the factors with square and curly brackets have the same scaling dimension (as one sees by comparing (2.38) with (2.37) or (2.20); we remark that this point was not taken care of in [5] and [8], simply because the factors with curly brackets played no role). The term $\delta^{-2} T_{[c,p]}^{(n+2)}$ can be associated precisely to the shear states. For example, in the expression

\[
\frac{1}{8} \text{Tr} \left( \langle \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \rangle \langle \xi T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \rangle \right) = T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} + T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[R,0]}^{(0)} - T_{[0]}^{(1)} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} - \frac{1}{\delta^2} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[R,0]}^{(1)},
\]

the last summand involves an additional scaling factor of $\delta$ and can thus be used to describe the effect observed in (2.21). Using again (2.34), we can reproduce the scaling of the first summand in (2.21).

In the weak evaluation formula (2.31), one can integrate by parts. This gives rise to the following integration-by-parts rules. On the factors $T_0^{(n)}$ we introduce a derivation $\nabla$ by

\[
\nabla T_0^{(n)} = T_0^{(n-1)}.
\]

Extending this derivation with the Leibniz and quotient rules, the integration-by-parts rules states that

\[
\nabla \left( \frac{T_0^{(n_1)} \cdots T_0^{(n_a)} T_0^{(b_1)} \cdots T_0^{(b_b)}}{T_0^{(c_1)} \cdots T_0^{(c_r)} T_0^{(d_1)} \cdots T_0^{(d_s)}} \right) = 0. \quad (2.39)
\]

As shown in [5, Appendix E], there are no further relations between the factors $T_0^{(n)}$.

We finally point out that the chiral factors $T_{[c,p]}^{(n)}$ and $T_{[c,p]}^{(n)}$ were introduced in such a way that the weak evaluation formula (2.31) remains valid. However, one should keep in mind that these chiral factors do not have logarithmic singularities on the light cone, which implies that they have no influence on the power $k$ in (2.31). This follows from the fact that the chiral factors only describe high-energy effects, whereas the logarithmic poles are a consequence of the low-frequency behavior of the massive Dirac seas (see also the explicit example (2.20) and the explanation thereafter).

### 2.6. Interacting Systems, Regularization of the Light-Cone Expansion

We now extend the previous formalism such as to include a general interaction; for the derivation see Appendix A. For simplicity, we restrict attention to the system (1.4) with massive neutrinos (1.8) and a non-trivial regularization of the neutrino sector by right-handed high-energy states. But our methods apply to more general systems as well (see Remark 2.3 below). In preparation, as in [5, §2.3] and [8, §4.1] it is helpful to introduce the auxiliary fermionic projector as the direct sum of all Dirac seas. In order
to allow the interaction to be as general as possible, it is preferable to describe the right-handed high-energy states by a separate component of the auxiliary fermionic projector. Thus we set

\[ P_{\text{aux}} = P_{\text{aux}}^N \oplus P_{\text{aux}}^C, \]

where

\[ P_{\text{aux}}^N = \bigoplus_{\beta=1}^3 P_{\tilde{m}_\beta} \oplus 0 \quad \text{and} \quad P_{\text{aux}}^C = \bigoplus_{\beta=1}^3 P_{m_\beta}. \]

Note that \( P_{\text{aux}} \) is composed of seven direct summands, four in the neutrino and three in the charged sector. As the fourth component of the neutrino sector is reserved for right-handed high-energy neutrinos (possibly occupying shear or general surface states), the corresponding component vanishes without regularization (2.41).

In order to recover \( P_{\text{aux}} \) from a solution of the Dirac equation, we introduce the chiral asymmetry matrix \( X \) by

\[ X = (\mathbf{1}_{\mathbb{C}^3} \oplus \tau_{\text{reg}} \chi_R) \oplus \mathbf{1}_{\mathbb{C}^3}. \]

Here \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \) is a dimensionless parameter, which we always assume to take values in the range

\[ 0 < \tau_{\text{reg}} \leq 1. \]

It has two purposes. First, it indicates that the corresponding direct summand involves a non-trivial regularization. This will be useful below when we derive constraints for the interaction. Second, it can be used to modify the amplitude of the regularization effects. In the limit \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \searrow 0 \), the general surface states and shear states are absent, whereas in the case \( \tau_{\text{reg}} = 1 \), they have the same order of magnitude as the regular states.

Next, we introduce the mass matrix \( Y \) by

\[ Y = \frac{1}{m} \text{diag}(\tilde{m}_1, \tilde{m}_2, \tilde{m}_3, 0, m_1, m_2, m_3) \]

(here \( m \) is an arbitrary mass parameter which makes \( Y \) dimensionless and is useful for the mass expansion; see also [5, §2.3] or [8, §4.1]). In the limiting case \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \searrow 0 \), we can then write \( P_{\text{aux}} \) as

\[ P_{\text{aux}} = X t = t X^* \quad \text{with} \quad t := \bigoplus_{\beta=1}^7 P_{m_\beta} \]

In the case \( \tau_{\text{reg}} > 0 \), the fourth direct summand will contain additional states. We here model these states by a massless Dirac sea (the shear, and general surface states will be obtained later from these massless Dirac states by building in a non-trivial regularization). Thus we also use the ansatz (2.44) in the case \( \tau_{\text{reg}} > 0 \). Since \( t \) is composed of Dirac seas, it is a solution of the Dirac equation

\[ (i\partial - m Y) t = 0. \]

In order to introduce the interaction, we insert an operator \( \mathcal{B} \) into the Dirac equation,

\[ (i\partial + \mathcal{B} - m Y) \tilde{t} = 0. \]

Just as explained in [5, §2.2] and [11], the causal perturbation theory defines \( \tilde{t} \) in terms of a unique perturbation series. The light-cone expansion (see [5, §2.5] and the references
therein) is a method for analyzing the singularities of \( \tilde{t} \) near the light cone. This gives a representation of \( \tilde{t} \) of the form

\[
\tilde{t}(x, y) = \sum_{n=-1}^{\infty} \sum_{k} m^{p_k} \text{(nested bounded line integrals)} \times T^{(n)}(x, y) \\
+ P^{\text{le}}(x, y) + P^{\text{he}}(x, y),
\]

(2.47)

where \( P^{\text{le}}(x, y) \) and \( P^{\text{he}}(x, y) \) are smooth to every order in perturbation theory. The remaining problem is to insert the chiral asymmetry matrix \( X \) into the perturbation series to obtain the auxiliary fermionic projector with interaction \( \tilde{P}^{\text{aux}} \). As is shown in Appendix [A] the operator \( \tilde{P}^{\text{aux}} \) can be uniquely defined in full generality, without any assumptions on \( \mathcal{B} \). However, for the resulting light-cone expansion to involve only bounded line integrals, we need to assume the \textit{causality compatibility condition}

\[
(i\partial + \mathcal{B} - mY) X = X^* (i\partial + \mathcal{B} - mY) \quad \text{for all } \tau_{\text{reg}} \in (0, 1].
\]

(2.48)

A similar condition is considered in [5, Def. 2.3.2]. Here the additional parameter \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \) entails the further constraint that the right-handed neutrino states must not interact with the regular sea states. This constraint can be understood from the fact that gauge fields or gravitational fields should change space-time only on the macroscopic scale, but they should leave the microscopic space-time structure unchanged. This gives rise to conditions for the admissible interactions of the high-energy states. As is worked out in Appendix [A] the gauge fields and the gravitational field must not lead to a “mixing” of the right-handed high-energy states with other states.

Assuming that the causality compatibility condition holds, the auxiliary fermionic projector of the sea states \( P^{\text{sea}} \) is obtained similar to (2.44) by multiplication with the chiral asymmetry matrix. Incorporating the mass expansion similar to (2.33) leads to the following formalism. We multiply the formulas of the light-cone expansion by \( X \) from the left or by \( X^* \) from the right (which as a consequence of (2.48) gives the same result). The regularization is built in by the formal replacements

\[
m^{p} T^{(n)} \rightarrow m^{p} T^{(n)}_{[p]} ,
\]

(2.49)

\[
\tau_{\text{reg}}^{(n)} \rightarrow \tau_{\text{reg}} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!} \frac{1}{\delta^{2k}} T^{(k+n)}_{[R,2n]} .
\]

(2.50)

Next, we introduce particles and anti-particles by occupying additional states or removing states from the sea, i.e.

\[
P^{\text{aux}}(x, y) = P^{\text{sea}}(x, y) - \frac{1}{2\pi} \sum_{k=1}^{n_p} \Psi_k(x)\overline{\Psi_k(y)} + \frac{1}{2\pi} \sum_{l=1}^{n_a} \Phi_l(x)\overline{\Phi_l(y)} .
\]

(2.51)

For the normalization of the particle and anti-particle states we refer to [5, §2.8] and [8, §4.3]. Finally, we introduce the regularized fermionic projector \( P \) by forming the \textit{partial trace} (see also [3, §2.3] or [8, eq. (4.3)]),

\[
(P)^{i}_{j} = \sum_{\alpha, \beta} (\tilde{P}^{\text{aux}})^{(i, \alpha)}_{(j, \beta)} ,
\]

(2.52)

where \( i, j \in \{1, 2\} \) is the sector index, whereas the indices \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) run over the corresponding generations (i.e., \( \alpha \in \{1, \ldots, 4\} \) if \( i = 1 \) and \( \alpha \in \{1, 2, 3\} \) if \( i = 2 \)).
again indicate the sectorial projection of the mass matrices by accents (see [5, §7.1] or [3] eq. (5.2)),

\[ \hat{Y} = \sum_{\alpha} Y_\alpha^\alpha, \quad \hat{Y} Y \cdots \hat{Y} = \sum_{\alpha, \beta, \gamma_1, \ldots, \gamma_{p-1}} Y_\alpha^{\gamma_1} \cdots Y_{\gamma_{k-1}}^\beta. \quad (2.53) \]

The notion “partial trace” might be confusing because it suggests that in (2.52) one should set \( \alpha = \beta \) and sum over one index (for a more detailed discussion see [5, paragraph after Lemma 2.6.1]). In order to avoid this potential source of confusion, in what follows we refer to the partial trace with a more concise notion as the sectorial projection.

Remark 2.3. (Regularizing general systems with interaction) We now outline how the above construction fits into a general framework for describing interacting fermion system with chiral asymmetry. Suppose we consider a system which in the vacuum is composed of a direct sum of sums of Dirac seas, some of which involve non-trivial regularizations composed of right- or left-handed high-energy shear or general surface states. Then the interaction can be introduced as follows: To obtain the auxiliary fermionic projector, we replace the sums by direct sums. For each Dirac sea which should involve a non-trivial regularization, we add a direct summand involving a left- or right-handed massless Dirac sea. After reordering the direct summands, we thus obtain

\[ P_{aux} = \left( \bigoplus_{\ell_1} P_m \right) \oplus \left( \bigoplus_{\ell = \ell_1+1} \chi L P_0 \right) \oplus \left( \bigoplus_{\ell = \ell_2+1} \chi R P_0 \right) \quad (2.54) \]

with parameters \( 1 \leq \ell_1 \leq \ell_2 \leq \ell_{\text{max}} \). In order to keep track of which direct summand belongs to which sector, we form a partition \( L_1, \ldots, L_N \) of \( \{1, \ldots, \ell_{\text{max}}\} \) such that \( L_i \) contains all the seas in the \( i \)-th sector. Then the fermionic projector of the vacuum is obtained by forming the sectorial projection as follows,

\[ P_i^j = \sum_{\alpha \in L_i} \sum_{\beta \in L_j} (P_{aux})^{\alpha}_{\beta}, \quad i, j = 1, \ldots, N. \quad (2.55) \]

The next step is to specify the intended form of the regularization by parameters \( \tau_{1}^{\text{reg}}, \ldots, \tau_{p}^{\text{reg}} \) with \( p \in \mathbb{N}_0 \). The rule is that to every left- or right-handed massless Dirac sea which corresponds to a non-trivial regularization we associate a parameter \( \tau_{k}^{\text{reg}} \). Regularizations which we consider to be identical are associated the same parameter; for different regularizations we take different parameters. Introducing the chiral asymmetry matrix \( X \), the mass matrix \( Y \), and the distribution \( t \) by

\[ mY = (m_1, \ldots, m_{\ell_1}) \oplus (0, \ldots, 0) \oplus (0, \ldots, 0) \quad (2.56) \]

\[ X = (1, \ldots, 1) \oplus \chi L (1, \ldots, 1, \tau_{k_1}^{\text{reg}}, \ldots, \tau_{k_a}^{\text{reg}}) \oplus \chi R (1, \ldots, 1, \tau_{k_{a+1}}^{\text{reg}}, \ldots, \tau_{k_b}^{\text{reg}}) \quad (2.57) \]

\[ t = \left( \bigoplus_{\ell_1} P_m \right) \oplus \left( \bigoplus_{\ell = \ell_1+1} P_0 \right) \oplus \left( \bigoplus_{\ell = \ell_2+1} P_0 \right), \quad (2.58) \]

the interaction can again be described by inserting an operator \( \mathcal{B} \) into the Dirac equation (2.46). Now the causality compatibility condition (2.48) must hold for all values of the regularization parameters \( \tau_{1}^{\text{reg}}, \ldots, \tau_{k}^{\text{reg}} \), thus allowing for an interaction only between seas with identical regularization. Using the causal perturbation expansion
and the light-cone expansion, we can again represent $\tilde{t}$ in the form (2.47). The regularization is again introduced by setting $P_{\text{sea}} = iX^*$ and applying the replacement rules (2.49) as well as

$$\chi_{L/R} \tau_j^{\text{reg}} T^{(n)} \to \chi_{L/R} \tau_j^{\text{reg}} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!} \frac{1}{\alpha^{2k}} T_{[R/L, 2n, j]}^{(k+n)} ,$$

where the additional index $j$ in the subscript $[R/L, 2n, j]$ indicates that the factors $T^{(n)}_o$ corresponding to different parameters $\tau_j$ must be treated as different functions. This means that the basic fractions formed of these functions are all linearly independent in the sense made precise in [5, Appendix E]. Finally, we introduce particles and anti-particles again by (2.51) and obtain the fermionic projector by forming the sectorial projection (2.55).

2.7. The $\iota$-Formalism. In the formalism of the continuum limit reviewed in §2.5, the regularization is described in terms of contraction rules. While this formulation is most convenient for most computations, it has the disadvantage that the effect of the regularization on the inner factors $\xi^{(-1+n)}_o$ is not explicit. The $\iota$-formalism remedies this shortcoming by providing more detailed formulas for the regularized fermionic projector in position space. The formalism will be used in §3.2, §4.6 and §5.2. It will also be important for the derivation of the Einstein equations in Section 8. Here we introduce the formalism and illustrate its usefulness in simple examples.

We begin for clarity with one Dirac sea in the charged sector. Then the mass expansion gives (cf. (2.29); see also [5, §4.5])

$$P_{\varepsilon}^c = \frac{i}{2} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{m^{2n}}{n!} \xi^{(-1+n)}_o T^{(2n)}_o + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{m^{2n+1}}{n!} T^{(2n+1)}_o ,$$

We choose a vector $\bar{\xi}$ which is real-valued, lightlike and approximates $\xi$, i.e.

$$\bar{\xi}^2 = 0, \quad \bar{\xi} = \xi \quad \text{and} \quad \bar{\xi} = \xi + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/|\bar{\xi}|) . \quad (2.59)$$

Replacing all factors $\xi$ in $P_{\varepsilon}^c$ by $\bar{\xi}$, we obtain the function $\tilde{P}_{\varepsilon}^c$,

$$\tilde{P}_{\varepsilon}^c := \frac{i}{2} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{m^{2n}}{n!} \xi^{(-1+n)}_o T^{(2n)}_o + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{m^{2n+1}}{n!} T^{(2n+1)}_o ,$$

Clearly, this function differs from $P_{\varepsilon}^c$ by vectorial contributions. We now want to determine these additional contributions by using that the contraction rules (2.36) and (2.37) hold. It is most convenient to denote the involved vectors by $i^{(n)}_p$, which we always normalize such that

$$\langle \bar{\xi}, i^{(n)}_p \rangle = 1 . \quad (2.60)$$

Then the contraction rules (2.36) and (2.37) are satisfied by the ansatz

$$P_{\varepsilon}^c = \tilde{P}_{\varepsilon}^c - \frac{i}{2} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{m^{2n}}{n!} \xi^{(-1+n)}_o (\langle (n-1)T^{(n)}_o + T^{(n+1)}_o \rangle , \quad (2.61)$$

as is verified by a straightforward calculation. To explain the essence of this computation, let us consider only the leading contribution in the mass expansion,

$$P_{\varepsilon} = \frac{i}{2} \xi^{(-1)}_o T^{(-1)}_o + i\xi^{(-1)}_o T^{(0)}_0 + (\text{deg} < -1) + O(m) . \quad (2.62)$$
Taking the square, we obtain
\[
(P^\epsilon)^2 = -\langle \xi, \xi_{[0]}^{(-1)} \rangle T^{(-1)}[0] T^{(0)}[0] - \langle \xi_{[0]}^{(-1)}, \xi_{[0]}^{(-1)} \rangle T^{(0)}[0] T^{(0)}[0] + (\text{deg} < -2) + \mathcal{O}(m).
\]

The first summand reproduces the contraction rules (2.36) and (2.37). Compared to this first summand, the second summand is of higher order in \(\varepsilon/|\xi|\). It is thus omitted in the formalism of the continuum limit, where only the leading contribution in \(\varepsilon/|\xi|\) is taken into account (for details see [5, Chapter 4]). More generally, when forming composite expressions of (2.61) in the formalism of the continuum limit, only the mixed products \(\langle \xi_{(n)}, \xi_{(n')} \rangle\) need to be taken into account, whereas the products \(\langle \xi_{(n)}, \xi_{(n')} \rangle\) involving two factors \(\xi_{(n)}\) may be disregarded. With this in mind, one easily sees that the ansatz (2.61) indeed incorporates the contraction rules (2.36) and (2.37). Concerning the uniqueness of the representation (2.61), there is clearly the freedom to change the vectors \(\xi_{(n)}\), as long as the relations (2.60) are respected. Apart from this obvious arbitrariness, the representation (2.61) is unique up to contributions of higher order in \(\varepsilon/|\xi|\), which can be neglected in a weak evaluation on the light cone.

In order to extend the above formalism to include the regularization effects in the neutrino sector, we define \(\bar{P}^\epsilon_m\) by replacing all factors \(\xi\) in (2.35) by \(\bar{\xi}\). Writing
\[
P^\epsilon_m(x, y) = \bar{P}^\epsilon_m - i\chi_L f^{(-1)}_{[0]}(-T^{(0)}[0] + T^{(1)}[0])
- i\chi_R \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} \delta_{2n} f^{(-1)+n}_{[2n]} \left( (n - 1) T^{(n)}_{[R,2n]} + \frac{1}{\delta^2} T^{(n+1)}_{(R,2n)} \right)
- i \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{m_{2n}^2}{n!} f^{(-1)+n}_{[2n]} \left( (n - 1) T^{(n)}_{[2n]} + T^{(n+1)}_{[2n]} \right),
\]
a straightforward calculation shows that the contraction rules (2.36), (2.37) and (2.38) are indeed respected.

Clearly, the \(\nu\)-formalism is equivalent to the standard formalism of (2.5). However, it makes some computations more transparent, as we now explain. For simplicity, we again consider the leading order in the mass expansion (2.62) and omit all correction terms, i.e.
\[
P^\epsilon(x, y) = \frac{i}{2} \bar{\xi} T^{(-1)}[0] + i f_{[0]}^{(-1)} T^{(0)}[0],
P^\epsilon(y, x) = P^\epsilon(x, y)^* = -\frac{i}{2} \bar{\xi} T^{(-1)}[0] - i f_{[0]}^{(-1)} T^{(0)}[0].
\]

Suppose we want to compute the eigenvalues of the closed chain. As we already saw in the example (2.62), contractions between two factors \(\xi_{(n)}\) are of higher order in \(\varepsilon/|\xi|\). Thus, in view of the relations (2.59), it suffices to take into account the mixed terms, i.e.
\[
A_{xy} = \frac{1}{2} f^{(-1)}_{[0]} \xi T^{(0)}[0] T^{(-1)}[0] + \bar{\xi} f^{(-1)}_{[0]} T^{(0)}[0] T^{(-1)}[0] + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/|\xi|).
\]
When taking powers of \(A_{xy}\), any product of the first summand in (2.67) with the second summand in (2.67) vanishes, because we get two adjacent factors \(\xi\). Similarly,
we also get zero when the second summand is multiplied by the first summand, because in this case we get two adjacent factors $\xi$. We thus obtain
\[(A_{xy})^p = \left(\frac{1}{2} \xi^{(-1)} T^{(0)} T^{(-1)}\right)^p + \left(\frac{1}{2} \xi^{(-1)} T^{(0)} T^{(0)}\right)^p, \tag{2.68}\]
where we again omitted the higher orders in $\varepsilon/|\vec{\xi}|$. Moreover, powers of products of $\xi$ and $\xi$ can be simplified using the anti-commutation relations; for example,
\[(\xi^{(-1)} \xi^{(-1)})^2 = 2 \xi^{(-1)} \xi^{(-1)} = 2 \xi^{(-1)} \xi^{(-1)}, \tag{2.69}\]
and applying (2.60) together with the fact that $\xi$ is real, we obtain
\[(\xi^{(-1)} \xi^{(-1)})^2 = 2 \xi^{(-1)} \xi^{(-1)}. \tag{2.70}\]
This shows that the Dirac matrices in (2.68) in the first and second summand in (2.68) both have the eigenvalues two and zero. From this fact we can immediately read off the eigenvalues of (2.67) to be
\[\lambda_+ = T^{(0)} T^{(-1)} \quad \text{and} \quad \lambda_- = T^{(-1)} T^{(0)}. \tag{2.71}\]
Clearly, these formulas were obtained earlier in the usual formalism (for details see [5, §5.3 and §6.1] or [8, §6.1]). But the above consideration gives a more direct understanding for how these formulas come about.

Another advantage is that it becomes clearer how different contributions to the fermionic projector influence the eigenvalues. We explain this in the example of a left-handed contribution of the form
\[P(x,y) \propto \chi_L \hat{\Psi}. \tag{2.72}\]

The corresponding contribution to the left-handed component of the closed chain is given by
\[\chi_L A_{xy} \propto \chi_L \hat{\Psi} P^e(y,x). \tag{2.73}\]
If we substitute $P^e(y,x)$ according to (2.66), the factor $\iota$ will be contracted in any composite expression either with $u$ or with another factor $\iota$. In both cases, we get contributions of higher order in $\varepsilon/|\vec{\xi}|$. Hence we can disregard the factor $\iota$,
\[\chi_L A_{xy} \propto -\frac{i}{2} \chi_L \hat{\Psi} T^{(-1)} \tag{2.74}\]
When multiplying with (2.77), the product with the second summand vanishes. Even more, using the anti-commutation relations, one finds that
\[(A_{xy})^p \not\xi (A_{xy})^q = \langle u, \xi \rangle \left(\frac{1}{2} \xi^{(-1)} \xi^{(-1)} T^{(0)} T^{(-1)}\right)^{p+q}. \tag{2.78}\]
This implies that only the eigenvalue $\lambda_{L+}$ is influenced; more precisely,
\[\lambda_{L+} \propto -\frac{i}{2} u_j \xi^j T^{(-1)} \quad \text{and} \quad \lambda_{L-} \propto 0. \tag{2.79}\]
Of course, this result is consistent with earlier computations (see for example [8, Proof of Lemma 7.4 in Appendix B]).
3. The Euler-Lagrange Equations to Degree Five

Before entering the analysis of the EL equations, we briefly recall the basics. Counting with algebraic multiplicities, the closed chain \( A_{xy} \) has eight eigenvalues, which we denote by \( \lambda_{ncs}^{xy} \), where \( n \in \{1, 2\} \), \( c \in \{L, R\} \) and \( s \in \{+,-\} \). The corresponding spectral projectors are denoted by \( F_{ncs}^{xy} \). In case of degeneracies, we usually omit the lower indices on which the eigenvalues do not depend. For example, in the case of the four-fold degeneracy \( \lambda_1^{1L} = \lambda_2^{1L} = \lambda_1^{1R} = \lambda_2^{1R} \), we simply denote the corresponding eigenvalue by \( \lambda_+ \) and the spectral projector onto the four-dimensional eigenspace by \( F_+ \).

The considerations in the previous section led us to choosing the Lagrange multiplier \( \mu = \frac{1}{8} \) (see (2.17)), and thus a minimizer \( P \) is a critical point of the auxiliary action \( S[P] = \int\int_{M \times M} L[A_{xy}] \, d^4x \, d^4y \) with \( L \) according to (1.1),

\[
L[A_{xy}] = \sum_{n,c,s} |\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}|^2 - \frac{1}{8} \left( \sum_{n,c,s} |\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}| \right)^2 = \frac{1}{16} \sum_{n,c,s} \sum_{n', c', s'} \left( |\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}| - |\lambda_{n'c's'}^{xy}| \right)^2.
\]

Considering first order variations of \( P \), one gets the EL equations (see [5, §3.5] or for more details [8, eq. (5.20)])

\[
[P, Q] = 0, \quad (3.1)
\]

where the operator \( Q \) has the integral kernel (see [5, §3.5 and §5.4])

\[
Q(x, y) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ncs} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \lambda_{ncs}^{xy}} F_{ncs}^{xy} P(x, y)
\]

\[
= \sum_{n,c,s} \left[ |\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}| - \frac{1}{8} \sum_{n', c', s'} |\lambda_{n'c's'}^{xy}| \right] \frac{\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}}{|\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}|} F_{ncs}^{xy} P(x, y). \quad (3.2)
\]

By testing on null lines (see [8, §5.2 and Appendix A], one sees that the commutator (3.1) vanishes if and only if \( Q \) itself is zero. We thus obtain the EL equations in the continuum limit

\[
Q(x, y) = 0 \quad \text{if evaluated weakly on the light cone}. \quad (3.3)
\]

By relating the spectral decomposition of \( A_{xy} \) to that of \( A_{yx} \) (see [5, Lemma 3.5.1]), one sees that the operator \( Q \) is symmetric, meaning that

\[
Q(x, y)^* = Q(y, x). \quad (3.4)
\]

As in [8] we shall analyze the EL equations (3.3) degree by degree on the light cone. In this section, we consider the leading degree five, both in the vacuum and in the presence of gauge potentials. In Section 4 we then consider the next degree four.

3.1. The Vacuum. Applying the formalism of §2.3 and §2.6 to the ansatz (1.4), (1.5) and (1.8) and forming the sectorial projection, we obtain according to (2.40) and (2.41) for the vacuum fermionic projector the expression

\[
P(x, y) = \frac{i}{2} \begin{pmatrix} 3 \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \chi_R \tau_{reg} & T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \\ 0 & 3 \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \end{pmatrix} + (\deg < 2), \quad (3.5)
\]
where we used a matrix notation in the isospin index. Thus
\[
\begin{align*}
\chi_L A_{xy} &= \frac{3}{4} \chi_L \begin{pmatrix}
3 \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & + \tau_{\text{reg}} \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & 0 \\
0 & 3 \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)}
\end{pmatrix} \\
+ \xi (\deg < 3) + (\deg < 2)
\end{align*}
\]
and the right-handed component is obtained by taking the adjoint. The eigenvalues can be computed in the charged and neutrino sectors exactly as in [5, §6.1] to obtain
\[
\lambda_{2+L} = \lambda_{2+R} = \lambda_{2-R} = \lambda_{2-L} = 9 T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + (\deg < 3) 
\] (3.6)
and
\[
\begin{align*}
\lambda_{1+L} &= \lambda_{1-R} = 3 T_{[0]}^{(0)} \left( 3 T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \right) + (\deg < 3) \\
\lambda_{1+R} &= \lambda_{1-L} = \left( 3 T_{[0]}^{(0)} + \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(0)} \right) T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + (\deg < 3) .
\end{align*}
\]
The corresponding spectral projectors can be computed exactly as in [5, §5.3 and §6.1] or [8, Section 6] to
\[
F_{1c,\pm} = \begin{pmatrix}
0 & 0 \\
0 & \chi_c F_s
\end{pmatrix}, \quad F_{2c,\pm} = \begin{pmatrix}
0 & 0 \\
0 & \chi_c F_s
\end{pmatrix},
\] (3.7)
where $F_{\pm}$ are given by
\[
F_{\pm} := \frac{1}{2} \begin{pmatrix}
1 & \pm \frac{\xi, \xi}{z - \bar{z}} \\
0 & 0
\end{pmatrix} + \xi (\deg \leq 0) + (\deg < 0).
\] (3.8)
Here the omitted indices of the factors $\xi, z$ and their complex conjugates are to be chosen in accordance with the corresponding factors $T_{[0]}^{(-1)}$ and $T_{[0]}^{(-1)}$, respectively. In the charged sector, this simply amounts to adding indices $[0]$ to all such factors. In the neutrino sector, however, one must keep in mind the contributions involving $\tau_{\text{reg}}$, making it necessary to keep track of the factors $T_{[R,0]}^{(n)}$. More precisely, setting
\[
F_{\pm}^{(n)} = T_{[R,0]}^{(n)} + \frac{1}{3} \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(n)},
\] (3.9)
we obtain
\[
2 \chi_R F_{\pm} = 1 \pm \frac{1}{4 L_{[0]}^{(0)} - L_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)}} \left[ \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \frac{1}{3} \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \right]
\]
and
\[
2 \chi_L F_{\pm} = 1 \pm \frac{1}{z_{[0]}^{(-1)} L_{[0]}^{(-1)} - 4 L_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \frac{1}{3} \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \right]
\]
with the error terms as in (3.7). Moreover, a direct computation shows that (cf. [5, eq. (5.3.23)])
\[
\begin{align*}
F_{nc^+} P(x, y) &= (\deg < 0) \\
F_{1c^-} P(x, y) &= \chi_c \begin{pmatrix}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{pmatrix} P(x, y) + (\deg < 0) \\
F_{2c^-} P(x, y) &= \chi_c \begin{pmatrix}
0 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{pmatrix} P(x, y) + (\deg < 0).
\end{align*}
\] (3.10)
Evaluating the EL equations (3.3) by substituting the above formulas into (3.2), we obtain the three conditions
\[
\begin{align*}
(2) & \quad \left[ \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} - \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} - \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} \right] \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} T^{-1} = 0 \\
(3) & \quad \left[ T^{-1}T[0] - \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} - \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} \right] \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} T^{-1} = 0 \\
(3) & \quad \left[ T^{-1}T[0] - \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} - \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} \right] \frac{T^{-1}T[0]}{T[0]} T^{-1} = 0.
\end{align*}
\]

These three equations must be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone.

To summarize, evaluating the EL equations for the fermionic projector of the vacuum (3.5), we obtain a finite hierarchy of equations to be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone. As the detailed form of these equations is quite lengthy and will not be needed later on, we omit the explicit formulas.

### 3.2. The Gauge Phases

Let us introduce chiral gauge potentials. As the auxiliary fermionic projector (2.40) has seven components, the most general ansatz for chiral potentials would correspond to the gauge group \(U(7)_L \times U(7)_R\). However, the causality compatibility conditions (2.48) reduce the gauge group to
\[
U(6)_L \times U(6)_R \times U(1)_R,
\]
where \(U(6)_L\) and \(U(6)_R\) act on the first and last three components, whereas the group \(U(1)_R\) acts on the fourth component. Similar as in \([8, \S 6.2]\), to degree five the gauge potentials describe phase transformations of the left- and right-handed components of the fermionic projector,
\[
P^{\text{aux}}(x, y) \to (\chi_L U_L(x, y) + \chi_R U_R(x, y)) P^{\text{aux}}(x, y) + (\deg < 2).
\]

However, as the gauge group (3.16) is non-abelian, the unitary operators \(U_{L/R}\) now involve the ordered exponential (for details see \([5, \S 2.5]\) or \([4, \text{Section 2.2}]\))
\[
U_{L/R} = \text{Pexp} \left( -i \int_x^y A^j_{L/R} \Sigma_j \right).
\]

Substituting the gauge potentials corresponding to the gauge group (3.16) and forming the sectoral projection, we obtain
\[
\chi_L P(x, y) = \chi_L \frac{i \xi}{2} T^{-1} \left( \hat{U}^{11}_L \hat{U}^{12}_L \hat{U}^{21}_L \hat{U}^{22}_L \right) + (\deg < 2)
\]
\[
\chi_R P(x, y) = \chi_R \frac{i \xi}{2} \left[ T^{-1} \left( \hat{U}^{11}_R \hat{U}^{12}_R \hat{U}^{21}_R \hat{U}^{22}_R \right) + \left( V \frac{T^{-1}}{T[0]} 0 \right) \right] + (\deg < 2),
\]
where
\[
U_{L/R} = \begin{pmatrix}
U^{11\pm1}_{L/R} & U^{12\pm1}_{L/R} \\
U^{21\pm1}_{L/R} & U^{22\pm1}_{L/R}
\end{pmatrix} \in U(6), \quad V \in U(1),
\]
and the hat denotes the sectorial projection,
\[
\hat{U}_L^{ij} = \sum_{\alpha, \beta = 1}^{3} (U_L^{ij})^\alpha_\beta, \quad \hat{U}_R = \sum_{\alpha, \beta = 1}^{3} (U_R)^\alpha_\beta. \tag{3.20}
\]

At this point it is important to observe that our notation in (3.19) is oversimplified because it does not make manifest that the four matrices \(U_{1L}^{11}, U_{2L}^{22}, U_{1R}^{11}\) and \(U_{2R}^{22}\) on the block diagonal describe a mixing of three regularized Dirac seas. Thus when the sectorial projection is formed, one gets new linear combinations of the regularized Dirac seas, which are then described effectively by the factor \(T_0^{(-1)}\). The analysis in [7] gives a strong indication that an admissible regularization can be obtained only by taking a sum of several Dirac seas and by delicately adjusting their regularizations (more precisely, the property of a distributional MP-product can be arranged only for a sum of at least three Dirac seas). This means that if we take a different linear combination of our three regularized Dirac seas, we cannot expect that the resulting regularization is still admissible. In order to avoid this subtle but important problem, we must impose that each of the four matrices \(U_{1L}^{11}, U_{2L}^{22}, U_{1R}^{11}\) and \(U_{2R}^{22}\) is a multiple of the identity matrix, because only in this case we get up to a constant the same linear combination of regularized Dirac seas as in the vacuum (for more details and similar considerations see [5, Remark 6.2.3] and [8, §9.3]). This argument shows that the matrices \(U_{1L}^{11}, U_{2L}^{22}, U_{1R}^{11}\) and \(U_{2R}^{22}\) must be multiples of the identity matrix. The following lemma tells us what these conditions mean for \(U_L\) and \(U_R\).

**Lemma 3.1.** Suppose that \(G \subset U(6)\) is a Lie subgroup such that in the standard representation on \(\mathbb{C}^6\), every \(g \in G\) is of the form
\[
g = \begin{pmatrix} a & * & * \\ * & * & * \\ * & * & c \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{with } a, c \in \mathbb{R}, \tag{3.21}
\]
where we used a \((3 \times 3)\) block matrix notation, and the stars stand for arbitrary \(3 \times 3\)-matrices. Then there is a matrix \(U \in U(3)\) such that every \(g \in G\) has the representation
\[
g = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \end{pmatrix} U \begin{pmatrix} bU^* \\ c \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{with } \begin{pmatrix} a \\ b \\ c \end{pmatrix} \in U(2). \tag{3.22}
\]
In particular, \(G\) is isomorphic to a Lie subgroup of \(U(2)\).

**Proof.** For any \(A \in T_G\) we consider the one-parameter subgroup \(V(\tau) = e^{i\tau A} \ (\tau \in \mathbb{R})\). Evaluating (3.21) to first order in \(\tau\), we find that
\[
A = \begin{pmatrix} a & Z^* \\ Z & c \end{pmatrix}
\]
with a \(3 \times 3\)-matrix \(Z\). Considering (3.21) for the quadratic terms in \(\tau\), we find that the matrices \(ZZ^*\) and \(Z^*Z\) are multiples of the identity matrix. Taking the polar decomposition of \(Z\), we find that there is a unitary matrix \(U\) such that
\[
A = \begin{pmatrix} a \end{pmatrix} U \begin{pmatrix} bU^* \\ c \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{with } a, c \in \mathbb{R} \text{ and } b \in \mathbb{C}. \tag{3.23}
\]
Exponentiating, one finds that \(V(\tau)\) is of the required form (3.22), but with \(U\) depending on \(A\).
We next choose two matrices \( A, \tilde{A} \in T_eG \) and represent them in the form (3.23) (where tildes always refer to \( \tilde{A} \)). It remains to show that \( U \) and \( \tilde{U} \) coincide up to a phase,

\[
\tilde{U} = e^{i\varphi} U \quad \text{with } \varphi \in \mathbb{R}.
\] (3.24)

To this end, we consider the one-parameter subgroup \( V(\tau) = e^{i\tau(A+\tilde{A})} \). Evaluating (3.21) to second order in \( \tau \), we obtain the condition

\[
\{ A, \tilde{A} \} = \begin{pmatrix} d1_{\mathbb{C}^3} & * \\ * & e1_{\mathbb{C}^3} \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{with } d, e \in \mathbb{R}.
\] (3.24)

Writing out this condition using (3.23), we find that

\[
a\tilde{a} + bU^* \tilde{b} \tilde{U} = d1_{\mathbb{C}^3}.
\] (3.25)

Let us show that there is a parameter \( \varphi \in \mathbb{R} \) such that (3.24) holds. If \( b \) or \( \tilde{b} \) vanish, there is nothing to prove. Otherwise, we know from (3.25) that the matrix \( U^* \tilde{U} \) is a multiple of the identity matrix. Since this matrix is unitary, it follows that \( U^* \tilde{U} = e^{i\varphi}1_{\mathbb{C}^3} \), proving (3.24). \( \square \)

We point out that the matrix \( U \in U(3) \) is the same for all \( g \in G \); this means that \( U \) will be a constant matrix in space-time.

Using the representation (3.22) in (3.19), the left-handed component of the fermionic projector becomes

\[
\chi_LP(x,y) = \chi_L \frac{ig}{2} T_{[-1]} \begin{pmatrix} U^{11}_L & U^{12}_L U^{*}_{MNS} \\ U^{21}_L U^{*}_{MNS} & U^{22}_L \end{pmatrix} + \text{(deg < 2)},
\] (3.26)

where \( U_L \in U(2) \), and \( U_{MNS} \in U(3) \) is a constant matrix. The matrix \( U_{MNS} \) can be identified with the MNS matrix in the electroweak theory. In (3.26), we still need to make sense of the expressions

\[
\hat{U}_{MNS} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \quad \text{and} \quad \hat{U}_{MNS}^* T_{[0]}^{(-1)}.
\] (3.27)

Again, the matrix \( U_{MNS} \) describes a mixing of regularized Dirac seas, now even combining the seas with different isospin. Since \( U_{MNS} \) is constant, one can take the point of view that we should adjust the regularizations of all six Dirac seas in such a way that the expressions in (3.27) are admissible (in the sense that the fermionic projector has the property of a distributional MP-product; see [7]).

For the right-handed component, the high-energy component \( T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \) makes the argument a bit more involved. Applying Lemma 3.1 to the right-handed component, we obtain a representation of the form

\[
\chi_RP(x,y) = \chi_R \frac{ig}{2} \left[ T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \begin{pmatrix} U^{11}_R & U^{12}_R U^{*}_{MNS} \\ U^{21}_R U^{*}_{MNS} & U^{22}_R \end{pmatrix} + \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \begin{pmatrix} V & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right] + \text{(deg < 2)}
\]

with \( (U_R, V) \in U(2) \times U(1) \) and a fixed matrix \( U \in U(3) \). As explained after (3.20), our notation is again a bit too simple in that it does not make manifest that the three Dirac seas and the right-handed high-energy states will in general all be regularized differently, and that only their linear combination is described effectively by the factors \( T_{[-1]}^{(-1)} \). With this in mind, we can repeat the argument after (3.20) to conclude
that the relative prefactor of the regularization functions in the upper left matrix entry should not be affected by the gauge potentials, i.e.

\[ U_R^{11} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \tau_{\text{reg}} V T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} = \kappa \left( T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \right) \quad \text{with } \kappa \in \mathbb{C}. \]

In particular, one sees that \( U_R^{11} \) must be a phase factor, and this implies that \( U_R \) must be a diagonal matrix. Moreover, we find that \( V = U_R^{11} \).

Putting our results together, we conclude that the admissible gauge group is

\[ G = U(2)_L \times U(1)_R \times U(1)_R. \quad (3.28) \]

Choosing a corresponding potential \((A_L, A_R^C, A_R^N) \in u(2) \times u(1) \times u(1)\), the interaction is described by the operator

\[ \mathcal{B} = \chi_R \left( \begin{array}{cc} A_L^{11} & A_L^{12} U_{\text{MNS}}^* \\ A_L^{21} U_{\text{MNS}} & A_L^{22} \end{array} \right) + \chi_L \left( \begin{array}{cc} A_R^N & 0 \\ 0 & A_R^C \end{array} \right). \quad (3.29) \]

Thus the U(1)-potentials \( A_R^N \) and \( A_R^C \) couple to the right-handed component of the two isospin components. The U(2)-potential \( A_L \), on the other hand, acts on the left-handed components, mixing the two isospin components. The \( U_{\text{MNS}} \)-matrix describes a mixing of the generations in the off-diagonal isospin components of \( A_L \).

In order to analyze the EL equations to degree five in the presence of the above gauge potentials, we need to compute the eigenvalues of the closed chain (see (3.3) and (3.2)). Combining (3.19) with the form of the gauge potentials as specified in (3.28) and (3.29), we obtain

\[ \chi_L \epsilon_{x,y} = \frac{3}{2} \chi_L i \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \left( \begin{array}{cc} U_L^{11} & \bar{\sigma} U_L^{12} \\ c U_L^{21} & U_L^{22} \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} \xi & 0 \\ 0 & V_R^N T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \end{array} \right) + (\text{deg} < 2) \quad (3.30) \]

\[ \chi_R \epsilon_{x,y} = \frac{3}{2} \chi_R i \xi \left( \begin{array}{cc} V_R^N T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & 0 \\ 0 & V_R^C T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \end{array} \right) + (\text{deg} < 2) \quad (3.31) \]

with \( U_L \in U(2) \) and \( V_R^N, V_R^C \in U(1) \), where we again used the notation \( \bar{U}_{\text{MNS}} \) and introduced the complex number

\[ c = \frac{1}{3} \bar{U}_{\text{MNS}}. \quad (3.32) \]

It follows for the closed chain that

\[ \chi_L A_{xy} = \frac{9}{4} \chi_L \left( \begin{array}{cc} U_L^{11} & \bar{\sigma} U_L^{12} \\ c U_L^{21} & U_L^{22} \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} V_R^N & 0 \\ 0 & V_R^C \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & \xi L_{[0]}^{(-1)} \\ \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & \xi L_{[0]}^{(-1)} \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} \xi & 0 \\ 0 & \xi \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & \xi L_{[0]}^{(-1)} \\ \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} & \xi L_{[0]}^{(-1)} \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} \xi & 0 \\ 0 & \xi \end{array} \right) \right. \]

\[ + \left( \text{deg} < 3 \right) \left( \text{deg} < 2 \right). \quad (3.33) \]

When diagonalizing the matrix \( (3.33) \), the factor \( L_{[0]}^{(-1)} \) causes major difficulties because it leads to microscopic oscillations of the eigenvectors. Let us explain this problem in detail. First, it is convenient to use the \( \nu \)-formalism, because then, similar as explained after (2.67), the contributions \( \sim \xi L_{[0]} \) and \( \sim \xi \) act on complementary subspaces. Thus it remains to diagonalize the \( 2 \times 2 \)-matrices

\[ \left( \begin{array}{cc} U_L^{11} & \bar{\sigma} U_L^{12} \\ c U_L^{21} & U_L^{22} \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{cc} V_R^N T_{[0]}^{(0)} L_{[0]}^{(-1)} & 0 \\ 0 & V_R^C T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \end{array} \right) \]
and
\[
\begin{pmatrix}
U_{11}^L & \sigma U_{12}^L \\
(c U_{21}^L & U_{22}^L
\end{pmatrix}
\begin{pmatrix}
V_R \ L_{[0]}^{(-1)} & L_{[0]}^{(0)} \\
0 & V_C \ L_{[0]}^{(-1)} & L_{[0]}^{(0)}
\end{pmatrix}.
\]

The characteristic polynomial involves square roots of linear combinations of the inner matrix elements, describing non-trivial fluctuations of the eigenvalues on the regularization scale $\epsilon$. Such expressions are ill-defined in the formalism of the continuum limit. A first idea for overcoming this problem would be to extend the formalism such as to include square roots of linear combinations of simple fractions. However, even if one succeeded in extending the continuum limit in this way, it would be unclear how the resulting square root expressions after weak evaluation would depend on the smooth parameters $U_{ij}^L$ and $V_{RC}^{N/C}$. The basic difficulty is that integrating over the microscopic oscillations will in general not preserve the square root structure (as a simple example, an integral of the form $\int_0^\infty \sqrt{a + x} f(x) \, dx$ cannot in general be written again as a square root of say the form $\sqrt{ab + c}$). This is the reason why the complications related to the factor $L_{[0]}^{(-1)}$ in (3.33) seem to be of principal nature.

In order to bypass this difficulty, we must restrict attention to a parameter range where the eigenvalues of the above matrices can be computed perturbatively. In order to make the scaling precise, we write $\tau_{\text{reg}}$ as
\[
\tau_{\text{reg}} = (m\epsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}} \quad \text{with} \quad 0 < p_{\text{reg}} < 2.
\] (3.34)

Under this assumption, we know that the relation
\[
T_{[p]}^{(n)} = L_{[p]}^{(n)} \left( 1 + O((m\epsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}) \right) \quad \text{holds pointwise} \quad (3.35)
\]
(by “holds pointwise” we mean that if we multiply $T_{[p]}^{(n)} - L_{[p]}^{(n)}$ by any simple fraction and evaluate weakly according to (2.31), we get zero up to an error of the specified order). Making $\tau_{\text{reg}}$ small in this sense does not necessarily imply that the above matrices can be diagonalized perturbatively, because we need to compare $\tau_{\text{reg}}$ to the size of the off-diagonal matrix elements $U_{12}^R$ and $U_{21}^R$. As they are given as line integrals over the chiral potentials (cf. (3.18)), their size is described by
\[
\|A_{12}^L\| \cdot |\vec{\xi}| \quad \text{and} \quad \|A_{21}^L\| \cdot |\vec{\xi}|
\]
where $\|\cdot\|$ is a Euclidean norm defined in the same reference frame as $\vec{\xi}$). This leads us to the following two cases:

(i) $|\vec{\xi}| \gg \frac{(m\epsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}}{\|A_{12}^L\| + \|A_{21}^L\|}$, (ii) $|\vec{\xi}| \ll \frac{(m\epsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}}{\|A_{12}^L\| + \|A_{21}^L\|}$. (3.36)

In fact, the computations are tractable in both cases, as we now explain.

**Case (i).** We expand in powers of $\tau_{\text{reg}}$. We begin with the case $\tau_{\text{reg}} = 0$. Then in the vacuum, (3.35) implies that the relations (3.13)–(3.15) are trivially satisfied. If gauge potentials are present, in the above matrices we can factor out the scalar functions $T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)}$ and $T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)}$, respectively. Thus it remains to compute the eigenvalues and spectral projectors of the $2 \times 2$-matrix
\[
\begin{pmatrix}
U_{11}^L & \sigma U_{12}^L \\
(c U_{21}^L & U_{22}^L
\end{pmatrix}
\begin{pmatrix}
V_R^N & 0 \\
0 & V_C
\end{pmatrix}.
\] (3.37)
Lemma 3.2. The matrix in (3.37) is normal (i.e. it commutes with its adjoint). Moreover, its eigenvalues have the same absolute value.

Proof. We denote the matrix in (3.37) by $B$ and write the two factors in (3.37) in terms of Pauli matrices as

$$B = (a\mathbf{1} + i\vec{v}\vec{\sigma}) e^{i\varphi} (b\mathbf{1} + i\vec{w}\vec{\sigma})$$

with $a, b, \varphi \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\vec{v}, \vec{w} \in \mathbb{R}^3$. Using the multiplication rules of Pauli matrices, one finds that

$$e^{-i\varphi} B = (ab - \vec{v}\vec{w})\mathbf{1} + i(a\vec{w} + b\vec{v} + \vec{v} \wedge \vec{w}) \vec{\sigma}.$$  \hfill (3.38)

A short calculation shows that this matrix is normal. Moreover, the eigenvalues of $B$ are computed by

$$e^{i\varphi} ((ab - \vec{v}\vec{w}) \pm i |a\vec{w} + b\vec{v} + \vec{v} \wedge \vec{w}|) .$$

Obviously, these eigenvalues have the same absolute value. \hfill \square

We denote the eigenvalues and corresponding spectral projectors of the matrix in (3.37) by $\nu_{nL}$ and $I_n$. Then, according to the above lemma,

$$|\nu_{1L}| = |\nu_{2L}| \quad \text{and} \quad I_n^* = I_n.$$  \hfill (3.39)

For the left-handed component of the closed chain (3.33) we thus obtain the eigenvalues $\lambda_{nLs}$ and spectral projectors $F_{nLs}$ given by

$$\lambda_{nLs} = \nu_{nL} \lambda_s, \quad F_{nLs} = \chi_L I_n F_s,$$  \hfill (3.40)

where $\lambda_{\pm}$ and $F_s$ are given by (cf. (3.6) and (3.8),

$$\lambda_{+} = 9 T^{(0)}_{[0]} T^{(-1)}_{[0]} + (\text{deg < 3}), \quad \lambda_{-} = 9 T^{(-1)}_{[0]} T^{(0)}_{[0]} + (\text{deg < 3})$$  \hfill (3.41)

$$F_{\pm} = \frac{1}{2} \left( \mathbf{1} \pm \frac{\xi_+ \xi_-}{z - \bar{z}} \right) + \xi_0 (\text{deg \leq 0}) + (\text{deg < 0}).$$  \hfill (3.42)

The spectral decomposition of $\chi_R A_{xy}$ is obtained by complex conjugation,

$$\lambda_{nR\pm} = \nu_{nR} \lambda_{\pm} = \overline{\lambda_{nL\pm}} = \nu_{nL} \lambda_{\pm}, \quad F_{nL\pm} = F_{nR\mp}^*.$$  \hfill (3.43)

Combining these relations with (3.39) and (3.41), we conclude that all the eigenvalues of the closed chain have the same absolute value. Thus in view of (3.2), the EL equations are indeed satisfied for $\tau_{\text{reg}} = 0$. In order to treat the higher orders in $\tau_{\text{reg}}$, one performs a power expansion up to the required order in the Planck length. The EL equations can be satisfied to every order in $\tau_{\text{reg}}$ by imposing suitable conditions on the regularization functions. Thus one gets a finite hierarchy of equations to be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone.

Case (ii). We perform a perturbation expansion in the off-diagonal elements $U_{L}^{21}$ and $U_{L}^{12}$. If we set these matrix elements to zero, we again get a spectral representation of the form (3.40)–(3.43), but now with

$$I_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad I_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$  \hfill (3.44)

and

$$\nu_1 = U_{L}^{11} V_{R}^{N}, \quad \nu_2 = U_{R}^{22} V_{R}^{C}.$$
$0 = U_{L}^{12}$. Expanding in powers of $U_{L}^{21}$ and $U_{L}^{12}$ again gives a finite hierarchy of equations to be evaluated weakly on the light cone, which can again be satisfied by imposing suitable conditions on the regularization functions.

We conclude that to degree five on the light cone, the EL equations can be satisfied by a suitable choice of the regularization functions, whenever the EL equations have a well-defined continuum limit. Clearly, the detailed computation of admissible regularizations is rather involved. Fortunately, we do not need to work out the details, because they will not be needed later on.

4. The Euler-Lagrange Equations to Degree Four

We now come to the analysis of the EL equations to degree four on the light cone. Before beginning, we clarify our scalings. Recall that the mass expansion increases the upper index of the factors $T_{0}^{(n)}$ and thus decreases the degree on the light cone. In view of the weak evaluation formula (2.31), the mass expansion gives scaling factors $m^{2} \varepsilon |\vec{\xi}|$. Moreover, the parameter $\tau_{\text{reg}}$ gives scaling factors $(m \varepsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}$ (see (3.34)). Unless stated otherwise, we shall only consider the leading order in $(m \varepsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}$, meaning that we allow for an error term of the form

$$\left(1 + \mathcal{O}\left((m \varepsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}\right)\right). \quad (4.1)$$

Finally, the weak evaluation formulas involve error terms of the form (2.32). Since the contributions to the EL equations to degree four on the light cone involve at least one scaling factor $m^{2} \varepsilon |\vec{\xi}|$ (from the mass expansion) or a factor with the similar scaling $\varepsilon |\vec{\xi}|/\ell_{\text{macro}}^{2}$ (from the light-cone expansion), the factors $\varepsilon |\vec{\xi}|$ (which arise from the regularization expansion) give rise to at least one factor $m^{2} \varepsilon^{2}$, which can be absorbed into the error term (4.1). Hence, unless stated otherwise, in all the subsequent calculations we neglect the

$$\text{(higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}} \text{ and } (m \varepsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}). \quad (4.2)$$

For ease in notation, in most computations we omit to write out the corresponding error term $(1 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}) + \mathcal{O}((m \varepsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}))$.

4.1. General Structural Results. We again denote the eigenvalues of the closed chain $A_{xy}$ by $\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}$. These eigenvalues will be obtained by perturbing the eigenvalues with gauge phases as given in (3.40) and (3.43). As a consequence, they will again form complex conjugate pairs, i.e.

$$\lambda_{nR\pm}^{xy} = \lambda_{nL\pm}^{xy}. \quad (4.3)$$

As the unperturbed eigenvalues all have the same absolute value (see (3.40), (3.39) and (3.41)), to degree four we only need to take into account the perturbation of the square bracket in (3.2). Thus the EL equations reduce to the condition

$$0 = \Delta Q(x, y) := \sum_{n,c,s} \left[ \Delta(\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}) - \frac{1}{8} \sum_{n',c',s'} \Delta(\lambda_{n'c's'}^{xy}) \right] \frac{\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}}{\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}} F_{ncs}^{xy} P(x, y), \quad (4.4)$$

where we again evaluate weakly on the light cone and consider the perturbation of the eigenvalues to degree two (also, the superscript $xy$ clarifies the dependence of the eigenvalues on the space-time points).
Here the unperturbed spectral projectors $F_{ncs}$ are given explicitly by (3.40) and (3.42). Moreover, the relations (3.10)–(3.12) can be written in the shorter form
$$F_{xy}^+ \xi = (\text{deg} < 0), \quad F_{xy}^- \xi = \xi + (\text{deg} < 0).$$
Combining these relations with the explicit formulas for the corresponding unperturbed eigenvalues (see (3.40) and (3.41)) as well as using (4.3), we can write $\Delta Q(x, y)$ as
$$\Delta Q(x, y) = i 2 \sum_{n,s} \left[ \mathcal{K}_{nc}(x, y) - \frac{1}{4} \sum_{n',c'} \mathcal{K}_{n'c'}(x, y) \right] I_n \chi_c \xi + (\text{deg} < 4), \quad (4.5)$$
where
$$\mathcal{K}_{nc}(x, y) := \frac{\Delta |\lambda_{nc-}|}{|\lambda_-|} 3^3 T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \quad (4.6)$$
(for more details see the proof of [8, Lemma 7.1]). Since the smooth factors in (4.5) are irrelevant, the EL equations (4.4) reduce to the conditions
$$\mathcal{K}_{1L} = \mathcal{K}_{2L} = \mathcal{K}_{1R} = \mathcal{K}_{2R} \mod (\text{deg} < 4). \quad (4.7)$$

For all the contributions to the fermionic projector of interest in this paper, it will suffice to compute $\Delta |\lambda_{nc+}|$ in a perturbation calculation of first or second order. Then the complex numbers $\mathcal{K}_{nc}$ can be recovered as traces of $I_n$ with suitable $2 \times 2$-matrices, as the following lemma shows.

**Lemma 4.1.** In a perturbation calculation to first order, there are $2 \times 2$-matrices $\mathcal{K}_L$ and $\mathcal{K}_R$ such that
$$\mathcal{K}_{nc} = \text{Tr}_{CZ^2} (I_n \mathcal{K}_c) + (\text{deg} < 4). \quad (4.8)$$
In a second order perturbation calculation, one can again arrange (4.8), provided that the gauge phases $\nu_{nc}$ in the unperturbed eigenvalues (3.40) and (3.43) must not to be taken into account and that the perturbation vanishes on the degenerate subspaces in the sense that
$$F_+ (\Delta A) F_+ = 0. \quad (4.9)$$

**Proof.** In view of (4.6), it clearly suffices to show that $\Delta |\lambda_{nc+}|$ can be written as such a trace. Writing
$$\Delta |\lambda_{nc+}| = \frac{1}{2|\lambda_+|} \left( (\Delta \lambda_{nc+}) \lambda_+ + \lambda_+ (\Delta \lambda_{nc+}) \right)$$
and using (4.3), one concludes that it suffices to show that
$$\Delta \lambda_{ncs} = \text{Tr}_{CZ^2} (I_n B) \quad (4.10)$$
for a suitable $2 \times 2$-matrix $B = B(c, s)$.

The linear perturbation is given by
$$\Delta \lambda_{ncs} = \text{Tr} (F_{ncs} \Delta A).$$
As the unperturbed spectral projectors involve a factor $I_n$ (see (3.40) and (3.43)), this is obviously of the form (4.10).

Using (4.9), we have to second order
$$\Delta \lambda_{ncs} = \sum_{n',c'} \frac{1}{\lambda_{ncs} - \lambda_{n'c'(-s)}} \text{Tr} (F_{ncs} \Delta A F_{n'c'(-s)} \Delta A). \quad (4.11)$$
Disregarding the gauge phases $\nu_{cs}$ in (3.40) and (3.43), we get
\[
\Delta \lambda_{ncs} = \sum_{n',c'} \frac{1}{\lambda_s - \lambda_{-s}} \text{Tr}(F_{ncs} \Delta A F_{n'c'(-s)} \Delta A) \\
= \frac{1}{\lambda_s - \lambda_{-s}} \text{Tr}(\chi_c I_n F_s \Delta A F_{-s} \Delta A),
\]
where in the last line we used the form of the spectral projectors in (3.40) and (3.43) and carried out the sums over $n'$ and $c'$. This is again of the form (4.10).

Instead of analyzing the conditions (4.7), we shall always analyze the stronger conditions
\[
\mathcal{K}_L(x,y) = \mathcal{K}_R(x,y) = e(\xi) \mathbf{1}_{C^2}.
\]
(4.12)

This requires a detailed explanation, depending on the two cases in (3.36). In case (i), when the projectors $I_n$ are determined by the chiral gauge potentials, the condition (4.12) can be understood in two different ways. The first, more physical argument is to note that the spectral projectors $I_n$ of the matrix product (3.37) depend on the local gauge potentials $A_L$ and $A_R$. In order for these potentials to be dynamical, the EL equations should not give algebraic constraints for these potentials (i.e. constraints which involve the potentials but not their derivatives). This can be achieved by demanding that the conditions (4.7) should be satisfied for any choice of the potentials. In view of (4.8), this implies that (4.12) must hold.

To give the alternative, more mathematical argument, let us assume conversely that one of the matrices $\mathcal{K}_L$ or $\mathcal{K}_R$ is not a multiple of the identity matrix. Then the perturbation calculation would involve terms mixing the free eigenspaces corresponding to $\lambda_{1cs}$ and $\lambda_{2cs}$. More precisely, to first order one would have to diagonalize the perturbation on the corresponding degenerate subspace. To second order, the resulting contribution to the perturbation calculation would look similar to (4.11), but it would also involve factors of $(\lambda_{1cs} - \lambda_{2cs})^{-1}$. In both cases, the perturbed eigenvalues would no longer be a power series in the bosonic potentials. Analyzing these non-analytic contributions in the EL equations (4.7), one finds that they must all vanish identically. Working out this argument in more detail, one could even derive (4.12) from the EL equations.

In case (ii) in (3.36), the projectors $I_n$ are isospin-diagonal (3.44), so that (4.7) only tests the diagonal elements of $\mathcal{K}_c$. Thus at first sight, (4.12) seems a too strong condition. However, even in this case the condition (4.12) can be justified as follows. The left-handed gauge potentials modify the left-handed component of the fermionic projector by generalized phase transformations. If the involved gauge potential is off-diagonal, it makes an off-diagonal component of $P(x,y)$ diagonal and vice versa. As a consequence, satisfying (4.7) in the presence of off-diagonal gauge potentials is equivalent to satisfying (4.12). We will come back to this argument in more detail in Section 7.

We finally use (4.8) in (4.5) to obtain a useful representation of $\Delta Q$:

**Corollary 4.2.** Under the assumptions of Lemma 4.1, the kernel $\Delta Q(x,y)$ in (4.4) has the representation
\[
\Delta Q(x,y) = \frac{i}{2} \sum_{n,c} \text{Tr}_{C^2} (I_n Q_c) I_n \chi_c \xi,
\]
(4.13)
THE CONTINUUM LIMIT OF A FERMION SYSTEM INVOLVING NEUTRINOS

where

\[ Q_L := \mathcal{K}_L - \frac{1}{4} \text{Tr}_{\mathbb{C}^2} (\mathcal{K}_L + \mathcal{K}_R) \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2} \]

(4.14)

(and \( Q_R \) is obtained by the obvious replacements \( L \leftrightarrow R \)).

The stronger condition (4.12) is then equivalent to demanding that the relations

\[ Q_L(x, y) = 0 = Q_R(x, y) \]

(4.15)

hold in a weak evaluation on the light cone.

4.2. The Vacuum. We begin by analyzing the eigenvalues of the closed chain in the vacuum. As the fermionic projector is diagonal in the isospin index, we can consider the charged sector and the neutrino sector after each other. In the charged sector, the eigenvalues can be computed exactly as in \([5, \S 5.3]\). Using the notation and conventions in \([8]\), we obtain

\[
\begin{align*}
P(x, y) &= \frac{3i}{2} \xi T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \frac{i}{2} m^2 \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y T_{[2]}^{(0)} + \hat{\mathcal{Y}} T_{[1]}^{(0)} + (\deg < 1) \\ \ \ \ \ (4.16) \\
A_{xy} &= \frac{3}{4} \xi \left( 3 T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + m^2 \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y \left( T_{[2]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[2]}^{(0)} \right) + \hat{\mathcal{Y}} T_{[1]}^{(0)} \frac{m}{2} \hat{\mathcal{Y}} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \right) \\
&\quad + \frac{3}{4} m^2 \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y \frac{m}{2} \hat{\mathcal{Y}} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[1]}^{(0)} + \frac{m}{2} \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y T_{[1]}^{(0)} T_{[2]}^{(0)} + (\deg < 2).
\end{align*}
\]

A straightforward calculation shows that the closed chain has two eigenvalues \( \lambda_{\pm} \), both with multiplicity two. They have the form

\[
\begin{align*}
\lambda_{+} &= 9 T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + m^2 (\cdots) + (\deg < 2) \\
\lambda_{-} &= 9 T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} + (\cdots) + (\deg < 2),
\end{align*}
\]

(4.16)

where (\( \cdots \)) stands for additional terms, whose explicit form will not be needed here (for details see \([5, \text{eq. (5.3.24)})\].

In the neutrino sector, by using (2.35) in the ansatz (1.8) and (2.41), after forming the sectorial projection we obtain

\[
\begin{align*}
P(x, y) &= \frac{3i}{2} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \chi R \tau_{\text{reg}} \frac{i}{2} \left( T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} + \delta^{-2} T_{[R,2]}^{(0)} \right) \\
&\quad + \frac{i}{2} m^2 \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y T_{[2]}^{(0)} + m \hat{\mathcal{Y}} T_{[1]}^{(0)} + (\deg < 1) \\
\chi L A_{xy} &= \frac{3}{4} \chi L \xi \xi \xi \left( 3 T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \tau_{\text{reg}} T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} + \tau_{\text{reg}} \delta^{-2} T_{[R,2]}^{(0)} \right) \\
&\quad + \frac{3}{4} \xi m^2 \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y \left( T_{[2]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[2]}^{(0)} \right) + m^2 \hat{\mathcal{Y}} Y T_{[1]}^{(0)} T_{[1]}^{(0)} \\
&\quad + \frac{3}{2} m \hat{\mathcal{Y}} \left( T_{[1]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[1]}^{(0)} \right) + (\deg < 2).
\end{align*}
\]

The contraction rules (2.36) and (2.38) yield \((\xi \xi \xi)^2 = (z + \bar{z}) \xi \xi + z \bar{z}\) and thus

\[
(z - \xi \xi - \bar{z}) = 0.
\]
This shows that the matrix $\xi^T \xi$ has the eigenvalues $z$ and $\bar{z}$. Also applying (3.35), the eigenvalues of the closed chain are computed by
\[
\lambda_{L^+} = \frac{3}{4} z \left( \frac{3 \tau_{\text{reg}} \delta^{-2}}{T^{(0)}_{[R,2]}}, + m^2 (\cdots) \right) = 9 T^{(0)}_{[0]} \frac{L^{(-1)}_{[0]}}{L_{[0]}} + 3 \tau_{\text{reg}} \delta^{-2} T^{(0)}_{[R,2]} + m^2 (\cdots) + (\text{deg} < 2) \\
\lambda_{L^-} = \frac{3}{4} T^{(-1)}_{[0]} \left( \frac{3 \tau_{\text{reg}} \delta^{-2}}{T^{(-1)}_{R,0}}, + m^2 (\cdots) \right) = 9 T^{-1}_{[0]} \frac{L_{[0]}^{(-1)}}{L_{[0]}} - 3 \tau_{\text{reg}} \delta^{-2} T^{-1}_{[R,0]} + m^2 (\cdots) + (\text{deg} < 2),
\]
where $L^{(n)}_{[0]}$ is again given by (3.9), and $m^2 (\cdots)$ denotes the same contributions as in (4.16) with the masses $m_\beta$ replaced by the corresponding neutrino masses $\tilde{m}_\beta$. The two other eigenvalues are again obtained by complex conjugation (4.3).

The first summands in (4.17) and (4.18) are of degree three on the light cone and were already analyzed in Section 3. Thus the point of interest here are the summands involving $\delta$. Before analyzing them in detail, we point out that they arise for two different reasons: The term in (4.17) is a consequence of the mass expansion for general surface states. The term in (4.18), on the other hand, corresponds to the last term in the contraction rule (2.38), which takes into account the shear of the surface states.

Let us specify the scaling of the terms involving $\delta$. Recall that the parameter $\tau_{\text{reg}}$ scales according to (3.34), whereas $\delta$ is only specified by (2.34). We want that the general surface and shear states make up for the fact that the masses $m_\beta$ of the charged fermions are different from the neutrino masses $\tilde{m}_\beta$. Therefore, it would be natural to impose that the summands involving $\delta$ should have the same scaling as the contributions $m^2 (\cdots)$ arising in the standard mass expansion. This gives rise to the scaling
\[
\frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{\delta^2} \approx m^2,
\]
and thus $\delta \approx (m \varepsilon)^{\frac{\text{reg}}{2}}$. But $\delta$ can also be chosen smaller. In this case, the terms involving $\delta$ in (4.17) and (4.18) could dominate the contributions by the standard mass expansion. But they do not need to, because their leading contributions may cancel when evaluated weakly on the light cone. With this in mind, we allow for the scaling
\[
\varepsilon \ll \delta \lesssim \frac{1}{m} (m \varepsilon)^{\frac{\text{reg}}{2}}.
\]
Assuming this scaling, by choosing the regularization parameters corresponding to the factors $T^{(0)}_{[R,2]}$ and $T^{(1)}_{[R,0]}$ appropriately, we can arrange that (4.3) holds. This procedure works independent of the masses $m_\beta$ and $\tilde{m}_\beta$.

4.3. The Current and Mass Terms. We now come to the analysis of the interaction. More precisely, we want to study the effect of the fermionic wave functions in (2.51) and of the chiral potentials (3.29) in the Dirac operator (2.36) on the EL equations to degree four. As in [3, Section 7] we consider the contribution near the origin in a Taylor expansion around $\xi = 0$.

**Definition 4.3.** The integrand in (2.31) is said to be of order $o(|\xi|^k)$ at the origin if the function $\eta$ is in the class $o(|\xi|^0 + |\xi|^{k-L})$. Likewise, a contribution to the fermionic projector of the form $P(x,y) \asymp \eta(x,y) T^{(n)}$ is of the order $o(|\xi|^k)$ if $\eta \in o(|\xi|^0 + |\xi|^{k+1-n})$. 
Before stating the main result, we define the bosonic current $j_{L/R}$ and the Dirac current $J_{L/R}$ by
\begin{align}
J_{L/R}^k &= \partial^j_j A^j_{L/R} - \Box A_{L/R} \tag{4.20} \\
(J_{L/R}^k)^{(i,\alpha)}_{(j,\beta)} &= \sum_{l=1}^{n_o} \overline{\Psi}_{l}^{(j,\beta)} \chi_{R/L} \gamma^k \Psi_{l}^{(i,\alpha)} - \sum_{l=1}^{n_a} \Phi_{l}^{(j,\beta)} \chi_{R/L} \gamma^k \Phi_{l}^{(i,\alpha)}. \tag{4.21}
\end{align}

Note that, due to the dependence on the isospin and generation indices, these currents are $6 \times 6$-matrices. We also point out that for the sake of brevity, in (4.20) we omitted the terms quadratic in the potentials which arise for a non-abelian gauge group. But as the form of these quadratic terms is uniquely determined from the well-known behavior under gauge transformations, they could be inserted into all our equations in an obvious way. Similar to the notation (2.53), we denote the sectorial projection by $\hat{j}$ and $\hat{J}$. Moreover, we introduce the $2 \times 2$-matrix-valued vector field $\mathcal{J}_L$ by
\begin{align}
\mathcal{J}_L^k &= \hat{J}_L^k K_1 + \hat{J}_L^k K_2 + \hat{J}_R^k K_3 \\
&\quad - 3m^2 \left( \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \right) K_4 \tag{4.22} \\
&\quad + m^2 \left( \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \right) K_4 \tag{4.23} \\
&\quad - 3m^2 \left( \hat{A}_R^k \hat{Y} \hat{Y} - 2 \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{Y} \hat{A}_R^k \right) K_5 \tag{4.24} \\
&\quad - 6m^2 \left( \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \right) K_6 \tag{4.25} \\
&\quad + 6m^2 \left( \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} \right) K_7 \tag{4.26} \\
&\quad + m^2 \left( \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} \hat{Y} + 2 \hat{Y} \hat{A}_R^k \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{Y} \hat{A}_R^k \right) K_6 \tag{4.27} \\
&\quad - m^2 \left( \hat{A}_R^k \hat{Y} \hat{Y} + 2 \hat{Y} \hat{A}_L^k \hat{Y} + \hat{Y} \hat{Y} \hat{A}_R^k \right) K_7, \tag{4.28}
\end{align}

where $K_1, \ldots, K_7$ are the simple fractions
\begin{align}
K_1 &= - \frac{3}{16\pi} \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} - c.c. \right] \\
K_2 &= \frac{3}{4} \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} - c.c. \right] \\
K_3 &= \frac{3}{2} \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} - c.c. \right] \\
K_4 &= \frac{1}{4} \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[2]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} - c.c. \right] \\
K_5 &= \frac{1}{4} \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[2]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} - c.c. \right] \\
K_6 &= \frac{1}{12} \frac{T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[1]}^{(0)} - T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[1]}^{(-1)}}{T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} - T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)}}^2 \\
K_7 &= \frac{1}{12} \frac{T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[1]}^{(0)} - T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[1]}^{(-1)}}{T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} - T_{[0]}^{(-1)} T_{[0]}^{(0)}}^2.
\end{align}
\[ K_7 = \frac{1}{12} \frac{T^{(-1)}[0]}{T^{(0)}[0]} \left( \frac{T^{(0)}[1]}{T^{(0)}[0]} - \frac{T^{(0)}[0]}{T^{(-1)}[0]} \right)^2, \]
evaluated weakly on the light cone (2.31) (and c.c. denotes the complex conjugate). Similarly, the matrix \( J_R \) is defined by the replacements \( L \leftrightarrow R \).

Lemma 4.4. The contribution of the bosonic current (4.20) and of the Dirac current (4.21) to the order \( \deg < 4 + o(|\vec{\xi}|^{-3}) \) are of the form (4.13) and (4.14) with

\[ \mathcal{K}_{L/R} = i\xi_k J^k_{L/R} + (\deg < 4) + o(|\vec{\xi}|^{-3}). \]

Proof. The perturbation of the eigenvalues is obtained by a perturbation calculation to first and second order (see [5, Appendix G] and [8, Appendix B]). The resulting matrix traces are computed most conveniently in the double null spinor frame \((\xi^L/\xi^R)\) with the methods described in [8, Appendix B]. One finds that \( \Delta A \) is diagonal on the degenerate subspaces, so that the second order contribution is given by (4.11). Moreover, the gauge phases \( \nu_{nc} \) in the unperturbed eigenvalues (3.40) and (3.43) only affect the error term \( o(|\vec{\xi}|^{-3}) \). We conclude that Lemma 4.1 applies, and thus \( K_L \) and \( K_R \) are well-defined.

In order to compute \( \mathcal{K}_{L/R} \), we need to take into account the following contributions to the light-cone expansion of the fermionic projector:

\[
\chi_L P(x, y) \asymp -\frac{1}{2} \chi_L \xi_i \int_x^y [0, 0 | 1] j^i_L T^{(0)}
- \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 2 | 0] j^i_L \gamma_i T^{(1)}
- im \chi_L \xi_i \int_x^y Y A^i_R T^{(0)}
+ \frac{im}{2} \chi_L \xi_i \int_x^y (Y A^i_R - A^i_L Y) T^{(0)}
+ im \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 1 | 0] \left( Y (\partial_j A^j_R) - (\partial_j A^j_L) Y \right) T^{(1)}
+ \frac{m^2}{2} \chi_L \xi_i \int_x^y [1, 0 | 0] Y Y A^i_L T^{(0)}
+ \frac{m^2}{2} \chi_L \xi_i \int_x^y [0, 1 | 0] A^i_L Y Y T^{(0)}
+ m^2 \chi_L \int_x^y [1, 0 | 0] Y Y A_L T^{(1)}
- m^2 \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 0 | 0] A_R Y T^{(1)}
+ m^2 \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 1 | 0] A_L Y Y T^{(1)}
\]

(for the derivation see [5, Appendix B] and [4, Appendix A]; cf. also [8, Appendix B]).
the C++ program class\_commute and an algorithm implemented in Mathematica) gives the result\(^2\).

We finally mention a rather subtle point in the calculation: According to (3.40) and (3.43), our unperturbed eigenvalues involve gauge phases and can thus be expanded in powers of \(A^c_k\xi_k\). As a consequence, we must take into account contributions of the form (4.11) where the factors \(\Delta A\) involve no gauge potentials, but the unperturbed eigenvalues \(\lambda_{\text{ncs}}\) are expanded linearly in \(A^c_k\xi_k\). In this case, the corresponding contributions involving no factors of \(A^c_k\xi_k\) can be identified with contributions to the eigenvalues in the vacuum in (4.16) and (4.17), (4.18). Using that the vacuum eigenvalues all have the same absolute value, the contributions linear in \(A^c_k\xi_k\) can be simplified to obtain the formulas for \(J^c_k\) listed above. Another, somewhat simpler method to get the same result is to use that the operator \(Q\) is symmetric (3.4) (see [5, Lemma 3.5.1]). Thus it suffices to compute the symmetric part \((\Delta Q(x,y) + \Delta Q(y,x)^*)/2\) of the operator \(\Delta Q\) as defined by (4.4). This again gives the above formulas for \(J^c_k\), without using any relations between the vacuum eigenvalues. □

Let us briefly discuss the obtained formula for \(J^c_R\). The summands in (4.22) involve the chiral gauge currents and Dirac currents; they can be understood in analogy to the current terms in [8, §7.1 and §7.2]. The contributions (4.23)-(4.29) are the mass terms. They are considerably more complicated than in [8, §7.1]. These complications are caused by the fact that we here consider left- and right-handed gauge potentials acting on two sectors, involving a mixing of the generations. In order to clarify the structure of the mass terms, it is instructive to look at the special case of a \(U(1)\) vector potential, i.e. \(A_L = A_R = A \cdot 1_{2 \times 2}\) (with a real vector field \(A\)). In this case, the terms (4.23) and (4.24) cancel each other (note that \(\hat{A}Y \cdots = 3\hat{A}Y \cdots\), and (4.25) vanishes. Similarly, the summand (4.26) cancels (4.28), and (4.27) cancels (4.29). Thus the mass terms are zero, in agreement with local gauge invariance.

4.4. The Microlocal Chiral Transformation. The simple fractions \(K_3\) and \(K_5\) involve factors \(T_0^{(1)}\) which have a logarithmic pole on the light cone. Before working out the field equations, we must compensate these logarithmic poles by a suitable transformation of the fermionic projector. We again work with a microlocal chiral transformation as developed in [8, §7.8–§7.11]. As the generalizations to a system of two sectors is not straightforward, we give the necessary constructions step by step. Before beginning, we mention for clarity that in the following sections §4.4 and §4.5 we will construct contributions to \(P(x,y)\) which enter the EL equations to degree four only linearly. Therefore, it is obvious that Lemma 4.1 again applies.

As in [8, §7.9] we begin in the homogeneous setting and work in momentum space. Then the logarithmic poles on the light cone correspond to a contribution to the fermionic projector of the form

\[
\tilde{P}(k) \propto (\chi_L \gamma_L + \chi_R \gamma_R) \delta^*(k^2) \Theta(-k^0),
\]

where the vector components \(v^j_L\) are Hermitian \(2 \times 2\)-matrices acting on the sector index. In order to generate the desired contribution (4.30), we consider a homogeneous...

---

\(^2\)The C++ program class\_commute and its computational output were included as ancillary files to the arXiv submission of [8]. The Mathematica worksheets were included as ancillary files to the arXiv submission of the present paper.
transformation of the fermionic projector of the vacuum of the form
\[ \hat{P}(k) = \hat{U}(k) P^{aux}(k) \hat{U}(k)^* \] (4.31)

with a multiplication operator in momentum space \( U(k) \). With the operator \( U(k) \) we want to modify the states of vacuum Dirac sea with the aim of generating a contribution which can compensate the logarithmic poles. We denote the absolute value of the energy of the states by \( \Omega = |k^0| \). We are mainly interested in the regime \( m \ll \Omega \ll \varepsilon^{-1} \) where regularization effects play no role. Therefore, we may disregard the right-handed high-energy states and write the vacuum fermionic projector according to (1.4), (1.6) and (1.8). Expanding in the mass, we obtain
\[ P^{aux} = (\not{k} + mY) \delta(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) - (\not{k} + mY) m^2 Y^2 \delta'(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) + (\text{deg} < 0) . \] (4.32)

For the transformation \( U(k) \) in (4.31) we take the ansatz
\[ U(k) = 1 + \frac{i}{\sqrt{\Omega}} Z(k) \quad \text{with} \quad Z = \chi_L L^j \gamma_j + \chi_R R^j \gamma_j , \] (4.33)

where \( L^j \) and \( R^j \) are 6 \times 6-matrices (not necessarily Hermitian) which act on the generation and sector indices. For simplicity, we assume that the dependence on the vector index can be written as
\[ L^j = L v^j_L \quad \text{and} \quad R^j = R v^j_R \] (4.34)

with real vector fields \( v_L \) and \( v_R \) (and 6 \times 6-matrices \( L \) and \( R \)). The ansatz (4.33) can be regarded as the linear Taylor expansion of the exponential \( U = \exp(iZ/\sqrt{\Omega}) \), giving agreement to [8, §7.9] (in view of the fact that the quadratic and higher orders of this Taylor expansion dropped out in [8, §7.9], for simplicity we leave them out here). Note that the operator \( U(k) \) is in general not unitary (for details see Remark 4.8 below).

Applying the transformation (4.31) and (4.33) to (4.32), only the isospin matrices are influenced. A short calculation gives
\[ \chi_L \hat{U}(\not{k} + mY) \hat{U}^* = \chi_L (3\not{k} + m\not{Y}) \] (4.35)
\[ + \frac{i}{\sqrt{\Omega}} \chi_L \left( \hat{L} \not{k} - \not{k} \hat{L}^* \right) + \frac{im}{\sqrt{\Omega}} \chi_L \left( \hat{L} \hat{Y} - \hat{Y} \hat{L}^* \right) \] (4.36)
\[ + \frac{1}{\Omega} \chi_L \hat{L} \not{k} \hat{L}^* + \frac{m}{\Omega} \chi_L \hat{L} \hat{Y} \hat{L}^* \] (4.37)
\[ \chi_L \hat{U}(\not{k} + mY) m^2 Y^2 \hat{U}^* = \chi_L (\not{k} m^2 \not{Y} \not{Y} + m^3 \not{Y} \not{Y} \not{Y}) \] (4.38)
\[ + \frac{im^2}{\sqrt{\Omega}} \chi_L \left( \hat{L} \not{Y} \not{Y} \not{k} - \not{k} \not{Y} \not{Y} \hat{L}^* \right) + \frac{im^3}{\sqrt{\Omega}} \chi_L \left( \hat{L} \not{Y} \not{Y} \not{Y} - \not{Y} \not{Y} \not{Y} \hat{L}^* \right) \] (4.39)
\[ + \frac{m^2}{\Omega} \chi_L \hat{L} \not{k} \not{Y}^2 \hat{L}^* + \frac{m^3}{\Omega} \chi_L \hat{L} \not{Y}^3 \hat{L}^* \] (4.40)

(and similarly for the right-handed component). Let us discuss the obtained contributions. Clearly, the terms (4.35) and (4.38) are the unperturbed contributions. Generally speaking, due to the factor \( \delta(k^2) \) in (4.32), the contributions (4.36) and (4.39) are singular on the light cone and should vanish, whereas the desired logarithmic contribution (4.30) must be contained in (4.37) or (4.30). The terms (4.36) of order \( \Omega^{-\frac{1}{2}} \) contribute to the EL equations to degree five on the light cone. Thus in order for them
to vanish, we need to impose that
\begin{align}
\hat{L} = 0 = \hat{R}
\end{align}
\begin{align}
\hat{L} \dot{Y} - \dot{Y} \hat{L}^* = 0 = \hat{R} \dot{Y} - \dot{Y} \hat{R}^*.
\end{align}

The last summand in (4.37) does not involve a factor $k$ and is even. As a consequence, it only enters the EL equations in combination with another factor of $m$, giving rise to a contribution of degree three on the light cone (for details see [8, Lemma B.1]). With this in mind, we may disregard the last summand in (4.37). Similarly, the last summand in (4.40) and the first summand in (4.39) are even and can again be omitted.

In order for the second summand in (4.39) to vanish, we demand that
\begin{align}
\dot{L} YY \dot{Y} - \dot{Y} YY \hat{L}^* = 0 = \hat{R} YY \dot{Y} - \dot{Y} YY \hat{R}^*.
\end{align}

Then it remains to consider the first summand in (4.37) and the first summand in (4.40). We thus end up with a left-handed (and similarly right-handed) contribution to the fermionic projector of the form
\begin{align}
\chi_L \tilde{P}(k) = \frac{1}{\Omega} \chi_L \hat{L} k \hat{L}^* \delta(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) - \frac{m^2}{\Omega} \chi_L \hat{L} k \gamma^2 \hat{L}^* \delta'(k^2) \Theta(-k^0).
\end{align}

Note that the conditions (4.41)–(4.43) are linear in $L$ and $R$, whereas the contribution (4.44) is quadratic.

Before going on, we remark that at first sight, one might want to replace the conditions (4.42) and (4.43) by the weaker conditions
\begin{align}
\dot{L} YY \dot{Y} = \hat{R} YY - \dot{Y} YY \hat{R}^* = iv_1(k) \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2}
\end{align}
\begin{align}
\dot{L} YY \dot{Y} = \hat{R} YY - \dot{Y} YY \hat{R}^* = iv_3(k) \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2}
\end{align}

involving two real-valued vector fields $v_1$ and $v_3$. Namely, as the resulting contribution to the fermionic projector acts trivially on the isospin index and is symmetric under the replacement $L \leftrightarrow R$, it perturbs the eigenvalues of the closed chain in a way that the absolute values of all eigenvalues remain equal, so that the EL equations are still satisfied. However, this argument is too simple because the gauge phases must be taken into account. For the contributions in (4.41), the methods in [8, §7.11] make it possible to arrange that the gauge phases enter in a way which is compatible with the EL equations. For the contributions corresponding to (4.45), however, it is impossible to arrange that the gauge phases drop out of the EL equations. Hence $v_1$ and $v_3$ would necessarily enter the EL equations. As the scaling factors $1/\sqrt{\Omega}$ in (4.36) and (4.39) give rise to a different $|\xi|^2$-dependence, these contributions to the EL equations would have a different scaling behavior in the radius. As a consequence, the EL equations would only be satisfied if $v_1 \equiv v_3 \equiv 0$.

For clarity, we want to focus our attention to the component of (4.44) which will give the dominant contribution to the EL equations. For the moment, we only motivate in words how this component is chosen; the detailed justification that the other components can really be neglected will be given in the proof of Proposition 4.6 below. In the EL equations, the chiral component (4.44) is contracted with a factor $\xi$. This means in momentum space that the main contribution of (4.44) to the EL equations is obtained by contracting with a factor $k$ (this will be justified in detailed in the proof of Proposition 4.6 below). Therefore, we use the anti-commutation relations to rewrite (4.44) as
\begin{align}
\tilde{P}(k) = \chi_L P^L_{ij}(k) \gamma_{ij} + \chi_R P^R_{ij}(k) \gamma_{ij}
\end{align}
Keeping in mind that we may again allow for a vector contribution proportional to the identity, we get the conditions
\begin{equation}
\begin{aligned}
P_L[k] := P_L^j(k) k_j &= \frac{1}{\Omega} \left( 2 \hat{L}_i \hat{L}_j^* k^i k^j - k^2 \hat{L}_j \hat{L}_j^* \right) \delta(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) \\
&\quad - \frac{m^2}{\Omega} \left( 2 \hat{L}_i Y^2 \hat{L}_j^* k^i k^j - k^2 \hat{L}_i Y^2 \hat{L}_j^* \right) \delta'(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) .
\end{aligned}
\end{equation}

As the factor \( k^2 \) vanishes on the mass shell, we may omit the resulting terms (for details see again the proof of Proposition 4.6 below). We thus obtain
\begin{equation}
P_L[k] = \frac{2}{\Omega} L[k] L[k]^* \delta(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) - \frac{2}{\Omega} L[k] m^2 Y^2 L[k]^* \delta'(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) ,
\end{equation}
where we set \( L[k] = \hat{L}_j(k) k^j \) (note that \( L[k] \) is a \( 2 \times 6 \)-matrix, and the star simply denotes the adjoint of this matrix). The right-handed component is obtained by the obvious replacements \( L \to R \).

Let us work out the conditions needed for generating a contribution of the desired form \( (4.30) \). Similar as explained in [8, §7.9], the first summand in \( (4.37) \) necessarily gives a contribution to the fermionic projector. For this contribution to drop out of the EL equations, we need to impose that it is vectorial and proportional to the identity matrix, i.e.
\begin{equation}
L[k] L[k]^* = R[k] R[k]^* = c_0(k) \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2}
\end{equation}
with some constant \( c_0(k) \). The second summand in \( (4.47) \) is of the desired form \( (4.30) \). Keeping in mind that we may again allow for a vector contribution proportional to the identity, we get the conditions
\begin{equation}
L[k] m^2 Y^2 L[k]^* = \frac{\Omega}{2} v_{L}[k] + c_2(k) \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2}
\end{equation}
\begin{equation}
R[k] m^2 Y^2 R[k]^* = \frac{\Omega}{2} v_{R}[k] + c_2(k) \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2}
\end{equation}
where we set \( v_{L/R}[k] = v^j_{L/R}(k) k_j \) (and \( c_2 \) is another free constant). Our task is to solve the quadratic equations \( (4.48) \) and \( (4.49) \) under the linear constraints \( (4.41) - (4.43) \). Moreover, in order to compute the smooth contribution to the fermionic projector, we need to determine the expectation values involving the logarithms of the masses
\begin{equation}
L[k] \left( m^2 Y^2 \log(mY) \right) L[k]^* \quad \text{and} \quad R[k] \left( m^2 Y^2 \log(mY) \right) R[k]^* .
\end{equation}

We next describe a method for treating the quadratic equations \( (4.48) \) and \( (4.49) \) under the linear constraints \( (4.41) \) (the linear constraints \( (4.42) \) and \( (4.43) \) will be treated afterwards). We first restrict attention to the left-handed component and consider the corresponding equations in \( (4.41) \), \( (4.48) \) and \( (4.49) \) (the right-handed component can be treated similarly). We write the matrix \( L[k] \) in components,
\begin{equation}
L[k] = \begin{pmatrix}
l_{11} & l_{12} & l_{13} & l_{14} & l_{15} & l_{16} \\
l_{21} & l_{22} & l_{23} & l_{24} & l_{25} & l_{26}
\end{pmatrix},
\end{equation}
where the matrix entries \( l_{ab} \) are complex numbers. We use the linear relations \( (4.41) \) to express the third and sixth columns of the matrices by
\begin{equation}
l_{a3} = -l_{a1} - l_{a2} , \quad l_{a6} = -l_{a4} - l_{a5} \quad (a = 1, 2) .
\end{equation}
This reduces the number of free parameters to 8 complex parameters, which we combine to the matrix

$$
\Psi = \begin{pmatrix}
\psi_1 \\
\psi_2
\end{pmatrix}
$$

with

$$
\psi_a = (l_a, l_{a2}, l_{a4}, l_{a5}).
$$

We introduce on $\mathbb{C}^4$ the scalar product $\langle ., . \rangle_0$ as well as the positive semi-definite inner product $\langle ., . \rangle_2$ by

$$
\langle \psi_a, \psi_b \rangle_0 = (L[k] L[k]^*)_b^a, \quad \langle \psi_a, \psi_b \rangle_2 = (L[k] m^2 Y^2 L[k]^*)_b^a.
$$

(4.54)

(where we implicitly use (4.52) to determine the third and sixth columns of $L[k]$). We represent these scalar products with signature matrices,

$$
\langle \psi, \phi \rangle_0 = \langle \psi, S_0 \phi \rangle_{\mathbb{C}^4}, \quad \langle \psi, \phi \rangle_2 = \langle \psi, S_2 \phi \rangle_{\mathbb{C}^4}.
$$

Expressing $\langle ., . \rangle_2$ in terms of $\langle ., . \rangle_0$,

$$
\langle \psi, \phi \rangle_2 = \langle \psi, S_0^{-1} S_2 \phi \rangle_0,
$$

the resulting linear operator $S_0^{-1} S_2$ is symmetric with respect to $\langle ., . \rangle_0$. Thus by diagonalizing the matrix $S_0^{-1} S_2$, one can construct an eigenvector basis $e_1, \ldots, e_4$ which is orthonormal with respect to $\langle ., . \rangle_0$, i.e.

$$
\langle e_a, e_b \rangle_0 = \delta_{ab}, \quad \langle e_a, e_b \rangle_2 = \mu_a \delta_{ab}.
$$

(4.55)

As the matrices have real-valued entries, we can choose the eigenvectors $e_a$ such that all their components are real. Moreover, as the matrices $S_0$ and $S_2$ are block-diagonal in the isospin index, we may choose the eigenvectors such that $e_1$ and $e_2$ have isospin up, whereas $e_3$ and $e_4$ have isospin down, i.e.

$$
e_1, e_2 = (\ast, \ast, 0, 0), \quad e_3, e_4 = (0, 0, \ast, \ast)
$$

(where the star stands for an arbitrary real-valued entry). Finally, we always order the eigenvalues and eigenvectors such that

$$
0 \leq \mu_1 \leq \mu_2 \quad \text{and} \quad \mu_3 \leq \mu_4.
$$

(4.56)

Writing the vectors $\psi_a$ in (4.53) in this eigenvector basis,

$$
\psi_a = \sum_{d=1}^4 \psi^d_a e_d,
$$

(4.57)

we can express (4.54) in the simpler form

$$
(L[k] L[k]^*)_b^a = \sum_{d=1}^4 \psi^d_a \psi^d_b, \quad (L[k] m^2 Y^2 L[k]^*)_b^a = \sum_{d=1}^4 \mu_d \psi^d_a \psi^d_b.
$$

(4.58)

Moreover, the linear condition (4.41) is satisfied.

In order to treat the remaining linear constraints (4.42) and (4.43), we decompose the coefficients in (4.57) into their real and imaginary parts,

$$
\psi^d_{1/2} = a^d_{1/2} + i b^d_{1/2}, \quad (d = 1, \ldots, 4).
$$

Considering the diagonal entries of (4.42) and (4.43) shows that

$$
b_1^1 = b_2^2 = b_3^3 = b_4^4 = 0.
$$

The off-diagonal entries make it possible to express $a_1^3, a_1^4$ in terms of $a_2^1, a_2^2$ and $b_1^3, b_1^4$ in terms of $b_2^1, b_2^2$, leaving us with the eight real parameters $a_1^1, a_1^2, a_1^3, a_1^4$ and $a_2^1, a_2^2, b_2^3, b_2^4$. 
In order to simplify the setting, it is useful to observe that all our constraints are invariant if we multiply the rows of the matrix $\Psi$ in \(4.53\) by phase factors according to
\[
\psi_1 \to e^{i\varphi} \psi_1, \quad \psi_2 \to e^{-i\varphi} \psi_2 \quad \text{with} \quad \varphi \in \mathbb{R}.
\] (4.59)
These transformations only affect the off-diagonal isospin components of the left-handed matrix in \(4.49\). With this in mind, we can assume that this matrix has real components and can thus be decomposed in terms of Pauli matrices as
\[
L[k] m^2 Y^2 L[k]^* = t \mathbb{1} + x \sigma^1 + z \sigma^3.
\] (4.60)
Using this in \(4.58\) and evaluating the real part of the off-diagonal elements of \(4.48\), one finds that
\[
b_1^2 = b_2^2 = 0 = a_2^2,
\] leaving us with the six real parameters
\[
a_1^1, a_1^2, a_2^3, a_4^3.
\] With these six parameters, we need to satisfy three quadratic relations in \(4.60\) and three quadratic relations in \(4.48\). This suggests that for given parameters \(c_0\) and \(c_2\) as well as \(t, x, z\), there should be a discrete (possibly empty) set of solutions.

Example 4.5. (isospin-diagonal potentials) Assume that the parameter \(x\) in \(4.60\) vanishes. Evaluating the real part of the off-diagonal components of \(4.48\) and \(4.60\), one finds that
\[
a_1^1 = 0 = a_2^2.
\] The diagonal components of \(4.48\) and \(4.60\) give the quadratic equations
\[
(a_1^1)^2 = \frac{-t + z - c_0 \mu_2}{\mu_2 - \mu_1}, \quad (a_1^2)^2 = \frac{t + z - c_0 \mu_1}{\mu_2 - \mu_1}, \quad (a_3^1)^2 = \frac{-t + z - c_0 \mu_4}{\mu_4 - \mu_3}, \quad (a_3^2)^2 = \frac{t - z - c_0 \mu_3}{\mu_4 - \mu_3}.
\] (4.61)\(4.62\)
For these equations to admit solutions, we need to assume the non-degeneracies
\[
\mu_2 \neq \mu_1 \quad \text{and} \quad \mu_3 \neq \mu_4.
\] Then there are solutions if and only if all the squares are non-negative. In view of our sign conventions \(4.56\), we obtain the conditions
\[
c_0 \mu_1 \leq t + z \leq c_0 \mu_2 \quad \text{and} \quad c_0 \mu_3 \leq t - z \leq c_0 \mu_4.
\] (4.63)
Provided that these inequalities hold, the matrix entries \(a_1^1, a_2^3, a_3^2\) and \(a_4^2\) are uniquely determined up to signs. For any solution obtained in this way, one can compute the logarithmic expectation value \(4.50\).

In order to analyze the conditions \(4.63\), we first note that changing the constant \(c_2\) corresponds to adding a constant to the parameter \(t\) (see \(4.60\) and \(4.49\)). Hence we can always satisfy \(4.63\) by choosing \(c_0\) and \(c_2\) sufficiently large, provided that
\[
\mu_1 \leq \mu_4 \quad \text{and} \quad \mu_3 \leq \mu_2.
\] (4.64)
If conversely these conditions are violated, it is impossible to satisfy \(4.63\) in the case \(z = 0\). The physical meaning of the inequalities \(4.64\) will be discussed in Remark 4.9 below.

In the next proposition, we use a perturbation argument to show that the inequalities \(4.64\) guarantee the existence of the desired homogeneous transformations even if off-diagonal isospin components are present.
Proposition 4.6. Assume that the parameters \( \mu_1, \ldots, \mu_4 \) defined by (4.55) and (4.56) satisfy the inequalities (4.61). Then for any choice of the chiral potentials \( v_L \) and \( v_R \) in (4.30), there is a homogeneous chiral transformation of the form (4.33) such that the transformed fermionic projector (4.31) is of the form

\[
\tilde{P}(k) = P(k) + (\chi_L \psi_L + \chi_R \psi_R) T_{[3,\epsilon]}^{(1)} + (\text{vectorial}) \ 1_{\mathcal{C}^2} \ 1 + \mathcal{O}(\Omega^{-1}) \ ]
\]

\[
+ (\text{vectorial}) \ 1_{\mathcal{C}^2} \ \delta(k^2) \ (1 + \mathcal{O}(\Omega^{-1}))
\]

\[
+ (\text{pseudoscalar or bilinear}) \ \sqrt{\Omega} \ \delta'(k^2) \ (1 + \mathcal{O}(\Omega^{-1}))
\]

\[
+ (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/|\xi|).
\]

Before coming to the proof, we point out that the values of the parameters \( \epsilon_0 \) and \( \epsilon_2 \) are not determined by this proposition. They can be specified similar as in [5, §7.9] by choosing the homogeneous transformation such that \( \epsilon_0 \) is minimal (see also Section 7). In order to clarify the dependence on \( \epsilon_0 \) and \( \epsilon_2 \), we simply added a subscript \( \epsilon \) to the factor \( T_{[3]}^{(1)} \). Similar to [5, eq. (8.3)], this factor can be written in position space as

\[
T_{[3,\epsilon]}^{(1)} = \frac{1}{32\pi^3} \left( \log |\xi|^2 + i\pi \Theta(\xi^2) \epsilon(\xi^0) \right) + s_{[3,\epsilon]},
\]

where \( s_{[3,\epsilon]} \) is a real-valued smooth function which depends on the choice of \( \epsilon_0 \) and \( \epsilon_2 \). In fact, \( s_{[p,\epsilon]} \) may even depend on the isospin components of \( v_L \) and \( v_R \); but for ease in notation we shall not make this possible dependence explicit.

Proof of Proposition 4.6. We first show that for sufficiently large \( \epsilon_0 \) and \( \epsilon_2 \), there are solutions of (4.60) and of the left equation in (4.48). Evaluating the real part of the off-diagonal components of (4.48) and (4.60), we get linear equations in \( a_1^2 \) and \( a_2^2 \), making it possible to express \( a_1^2 \) and \( a_2^2 \) in terms of \( a_1^0, a_2^0, a_2^1, a_2^2 \). These relations do not involve \( \epsilon_0 \) nor \( \epsilon_2 \). As a consequence, the diagonal components of (4.48) and (4.60) give a system of equations, which for large parameters \( \epsilon_0 \) and \( \epsilon_2 \) are a perturbation of the system (4.61) and (4.62). Hence for sufficiently large \( \epsilon_0 \) and \( \epsilon_2 \), there are solutions by the implicit function theorem.

Repeating the above arguments for the right-handed potentials, we obtain matrices \( L[k] \) and \( R[k] \) such that (4.48) and (4.49) hold. Moreover, it is clear from our constructions that (4.44), (4.42) and (4.43) are satisfied. It remains to go through all the contributions (4.35)–(4.40) and to verify that they are of the form (4.65)–(4.69). Clearly, (4.35) and (4.38) combine to the summand \( P(k) \) in (4.65). The contributions in (4.36) vanish due to (4.41) and (4.42). The second summand in (4.37) as well as the first summand in (4.39) are of the form (4.68). The second summand in (4.39) vanishes in view of (4.33). Hence it really suffices to consider the first summand in (4.37) and the first summand in (4.40), which were combined earlier in (4.41).

It remains to justify the contraction with the momentum \( k \), which led us to analyze (4.47). To this end, we need to consider the derivation of the weak evaluation formulas on the light cone in [5, Chapter 4]. More precisely, the expansion of the vector component in [5, eq. (4.4.6)–(4.4.8)] shows that \( k \) and \( \xi \) are collinear, up to errors of the order \( \varepsilon/|\xi| \). Moreover, the terms in (4.46) which involve a factor \( k^2 \) are again of
the order $\varepsilon/|\vec{\xi}|$ smaller than the terms where the factors $k$ are both contracted to $\hat{L}$ or $\hat{L}^\ast$. This explains the error term (4.69). \hfill $\Box$

We remark that the error term (4.69) could probably be improved by analyzing those components of $\hat{L}^j(k)$ which vanish in the contraction $\hat{L}^j(k)k^j$. Here we shall not enter this analysis because errors of the order $\varepsilon/|\vec{\xi}|$ appear anyway when evaluating weakly on the light cone (2.31).

Exactly as in [8, §7.10], one can use a quasi-homogeneous ansatz to extend the above methods to a microlocal chiral transformation of the form

$$U(x,y) = \int \frac{d^4k}{(2\pi)^4} U(k, v_{L/R} \left( \frac{x+y}{2} \right)) e^{-ik(x-y)},$$

and one introduced the auxiliary fermionic projector is defined via the Dirac equation

$$(U^{-1})^\ast (i\partial - mY) U^{-1} \tilde{P}_{\text{aux}} = 0.$$ (4.71)

This gives the following result.

**Proposition 4.7.** Assume that the parameters $\mu_1, \ldots, \mu_4$ defined by (4.55) and (4.56) satisfy the inequalities (4.64). Then for any choice of the chiral potentials $v_L$ and $v_R$ in (4.30), there is a microlocal chiral transformation of the form (4.70) such that the transformed fermionic projector $\tilde{P} := \hat{U} P_{\text{aux}} \hat{U}^\ast$ is of the form

$$\tilde{P}(x,y) = P(x,y) + (\chi_L \psi_L + \chi_R \psi_R) T_{[3,\xi]}^{(1)} \left( 1 + O(|\vec{\xi}|/\ell_{\text{macro}}) \right)$$

$$+ \text{(vectorial) } 1_{C^2} \left( \text{deg < 2} \right) + \text{(pseudoscalar or bilinear) } \text{(deg < 1)}$$

$$+ \text{(smooth contributions) } + \text{(higher orders in } \varepsilon/|\vec{\xi}| \text{).}$$

We conclude this section with two remarks.

**Remark 4.8. (Unitarity of $U$)** We now explain why would be preferable that the operator $U$ in the microlocal transformation were unitary, and how and to which extent this can be arranged. We begin with the homogeneous setting (4.31) and (4.33). As pointed out after (4.33), the operator $U$ as given by (4.33) is in general not unitary. However, the following construction makes it possible to replace $U$ by a unitary operator without effecting out results: We first consider the left-handed matrices $L^j(k)$.

Note that our analysis only involved the sectorial projection $\hat{L}[k]$ of these matrices contracted with $k$. Moreover, by multiplying the columns by a phase (4.59) we could arrange that all the components in (4.50) were real. In this situation, a straightforward analysis shows that there is indeed a Hermitian $6 \times 6$-matrix whose sectorial projection coincides with (4.50). By choosing the other components of $L^j(k)$ appropriately, one can arrange that the matrices $L^j(k)$ are all Hermitian, and (4.50) still holds. Similarly, one can also arrange that the matrices $R^j(k)$ are Hermitian. Replacing the ansatz (4.33) by $U = \exp(iZ/\sqrt{\Omega})$, we get a unitary operator. A straightforward calculation shows that expanding the exponential in a Taylor series, the second and higher orders of this expansion only effect the error terms in Proposition 4.6 (for a similar calculation see [8, §7.9]).

Having arranged that $U$ is unitary has the advantage that the auxiliary fermionic projector defined via the Dirac equation (4.71) is simply given by $\tilde{P}_{\text{aux}} = UPU^\ast$ (whereas if $U$ were not unitary, the auxiliary fermionic projector would involve unknown smooth correction terms; see the similar discussion for local transformations in [8, §7.7]).
In the microlocal setting (4.70), the transformation \(U\) will no longer be unitary, even if the used homogeneous transformations \(U(\cdot, v_{L/R})\) are unitary for every \(v_{L/R}\). Thus it seems unavoidable that the fermionic projector defined via the Dirac equation (4.71) will differ from the operator \(U P U^*\) by smooth contributions on the light cone (see also the discussion after [8, eq. (7.82)]). But even then it is of advantage to choose the homogeneous transformations \(U(\cdot, v_{L/R})\) to be unitary, because then the correction terms obviously vanish in the limit \(\ell_{\text{macro}} \to \infty\). More precisely, a straightforward analysis shows that these correction terms are of the order \(|\vec{\xi}|/\ell_{\text{macro}}\).

\[\text{Remark 4.9. (Lower bound on the largest neutrino mass)}\]

The inequalities (4.63) give constraints for the masses of the fermions, as we now explain. Thinking of the interactions of the standard model, we want to be able to treat the case when a left-handed gauge field but no right-handed gauge fields are present. In this case, \(\varsigma_0\) is non-zero, but the parameter \(z\) vanishes for the right-handed component. In view of our sign conventions (4.56), the first inequality in (4.63) implies that \(\varsigma_0 > 0\). Then the inequalities (4.63) yield the necessary conditions (4.64). More precisely, the eigenvalues \(\mu_1, \ldots, \mu_4\) are given in terms of the lepton masses by (see also the equation before Proposition 7.7 in [8])

\[
\begin{align*}
\mu_{1/2} &= \frac{1}{3} \left( \tilde{m}_1^2 + \tilde{m}_2^2 + \tilde{m}_3^2 + \sqrt{\tilde{m}_1^4 + \tilde{m}_2^4 + \tilde{m}_3^4 - \tilde{m}_1^2 \tilde{m}_2^2 - \tilde{m}_2^2 \tilde{m}_3^2 - \tilde{m}_1^2 \tilde{m}_3^2} \right), \\
\mu_{3/4} &= \frac{1}{3} \left( m_1^2 + m_2^2 + m_3^2 + \sqrt{m_1^4 + m_2^4 + m_3^4 - m_1^2 m_2^2 - m_2^2 m_3^2 - m_1^2 m_3^2} \right).
\end{align*}
\]

The first inequality in (4.64) is satisfied once the mass \(m_3\) of the \(\tau\)-lepton is much larger than the neutrino masses, as is the case for present experimental data. However, the second inequality in (4.64) demands that the largest neutrino mass \(\tilde{m}_3\) must be at least of the same order of magnitude as \(m_2\). In particular, our model does not allow for a description of the interactions in the standard model if all neutrino masses are too small.

Before comparing this prediction with experiments, one should clearly take into account that we are working here with the naked masses, which differ from the physical masses by the contributions due to the self-interaction (with a natural ultraviolet cutoff given by the regularization length \(\varepsilon\)). Moreover, one should consider the possibility of heavy and yet unobserved so-called sterile neutrinos.

\[\text{We finally point out that here our method was to compensate all the logarithmic poles by a microlocal chiral transformation. Following the method of treating the algebraic constraints which will be introduced in \S 6.1 below, one can take the alternative point of view that it suffices to compensate the logarithmic poles in the direction of the dynamical gauge potentials. This alternative method is preferable because it gives a bit more freedom in choosing the microlocal chiral transformation. For conceptual clarity, we postpone this improved method to the following paper [1], where a system involving quarks is analyzed (see [1, \S 4.2]).}\]

4.5. The Shear Contributions. We proceed by analyzing the higher orders in an expansion in the chiral gauge potentials. Qualitatively speaking, these higher order contributions describe generalized phase transformations of the fermionic projector. Our task is to analyze how precisely the gauge phases come up and how they enter...
the EL equations. The most singular contributions to discuss are the error terms

$$\text{(vectorial) } \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2} \text{ (deg} = 1)$$  \hspace{1cm} (4.75)

in Proposition 4.7. If modified by gauge phases, these error terms give rise to the so-called shear contributions by the microlocal chiral transformation. In the setting of one sector, these shear contributions were analyzed in detail in \[8, \S 7.11\]. As the adaptation to the present setting of two sectors is not straightforward, we give the construction in detail.

Recall that the gauge phases enter the fermionic projector to degree two according to (3.30) and (3.31). In order to ensure that the error term (4.75) drops out of the EL equations, it must depend on the gauge phases exactly as (3.30), i.e. it must be modified by the gauge phases to

$$\left[ \chi_L \left( \begin{array}{cc} U_{11} & \sigma U_{12} \\ c U_{21} & U_{22} \end{array} \right) + \chi_R \left( \begin{array}{cc} V_N & 0 \\ 0 & V_R \end{array} \right) \right] \times \text{(vectorial) } \mathbb{1}_{\mathbb{C}^2} \text{ (deg} = 1).$$ \hspace{1cm} (4.76)

Namely, if (4.76) holds, then the corresponding contributions to the closed chain involve the gauge phases exactly as in (3.33), and a straightforward calculation using (3.38) (as well as (3.9) and (3.35)) shows that the eigenvalues of the closed chain all have the same absolute value. If conversely (4.76) is violated, then the eigenvalues of the closed chain are not the same, and the EL equations will be violated (at least without imposing conditions on the regularization functions). We conclude that the transformation law (4.76) is necessary and sufficient for the EL equations to be satisfied to degree five on the light cone.

In order to arrange (4.76), we follow the procedure in \[8, \S 7.11\] and write down the Dirac equation for the auxiliary fermionic projector

$$\mathcal{D} \tilde{P}_{\text{aux}} = 0,$$ \hspace{1cm} (4.77)

where \(\mathcal{D}\) is obtained from the Dirac operator with chiral gauge fields (see (2.46) and (3.29)) by performing the nonlocal transformation (4.71),

$$\mathcal{D} := (U^{-1})^* \left( i \partial_x + \chi_L \mathcal{A}_{R} + \chi_R \mathcal{A}_{L} - mY \right) U^{-1}.$$ \hspace{1cm}

For clarity, we begin with the case when \(U\) is homogeneous (4.33) (but the gauge potentials \(\mathcal{A}_{LR}\) are clearly varying in space-time; the generalization to a microlocal transformation will be carried out after (4.84) below). We decompose \(\mathcal{D}\) into its even and odd components,

$$\mathcal{D} = \mathcal{D}_{\text{odd}} + \mathcal{D}_{\text{even}},$$

where

$$\mathcal{D}_{\text{odd}} = \chi_L \mathcal{D}_R + \chi_R \mathcal{D}_L \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{D}_{\text{even}} = \chi_L \mathcal{D}_L + \chi_R \mathcal{D}_R.$$ \hspace{1cm}

In \[8, \S 7.11\] we flipped the chirality of the gauge fields in \(\mathcal{D}_{\text{even}}\). As will become clear below, we here need more freedom to modify the gauge potentials in \(\mathcal{D}_{\text{even}}\). To this end, we now replace the gauge fields in \(\mathcal{D}_{\text{even}}\) by new gauge fields \(\mathcal{A}_{LR}^{\text{even}}\) to be determined later,

$$\mathcal{D}^{\text{flip}}_{\text{even}} = \sum_{c=L/R} \chi_c \left( U^{-1} \right)^* \left( i \partial_x + \chi_L \mathcal{A}_{R}^{\text{even}} + \chi_R \mathcal{A}_{L}^{\text{even}} - mY \right) U^{-1} \chi_c.$$ \hspace{1cm} (4.78)

We replace the Dirac equation (4.77) by

$$\left( \mathcal{D}_{\text{odd}} + \mathcal{D}^{\text{flip}}_{\text{even}} \right) \tilde{P}_{\text{aux}} = 0.$$ \hspace{1cm} (4.79)
Exactly as in the proof of [8, Proposition 7.12], one sees that the component $\sim \Omega^{-1}$ of $P$ satisfies the Dirac equation involving the chiral gauge potentials $A_{L/R}^{\text{even}}$. In view of (4.41) and (4.48), we find that the left-handed contribution of (4.75) is modified by the chiral gauge potentials to

$$L[k] \exp \left(-i \int_x^y (A_{R}^{\text{even}})_{j} \xi^j \right) L[k]^* . \quad (4.80)$$

Thus similar as in (3.17), gauge phases appear. The difference is that the chirality is flipped, and moreover here the new potentials $A_{L/R}^{\text{even}}$ enter. A-priori, these potentials can be chosen arbitrarily according to the gauge group (3.16).

For the right-handed component of the fermionic projector, we can use that

$$A_{L}^{\text{even}} = \left( \begin{array}{cc} A_R^N & 0 \\ 0 & A_R^C \end{array} \right). \quad (4.81)$$

For the left-handed component of the fermionic projector, the basic difficulty is that the matrix $L[k]$ is non-trivial in the generation index (see (4.51)–(4.53)). Moreover, the gauge potential $A_{L}$ involves the MNS matrix $U_{\text{MNS}}$ (see (3.26)). Therefore, it is not obvious how (4.80) can be related to (3.26). But the following construction shows that for a specific choice of $A_{L}^{\text{even}}$ the connection can be made: We denote the two column vectors of $L[k]^*$ by $\ell_1, \ell_2 \in \mathbb{C}^6$. In view of (4.48), these vectors are orthogonal.

We set $\ell_1 = \ell_1/\|\ell_1\|$ and $\ell_4 = \ell_2/\|\ell_2\|$ and extend these two vectors to an orthonormal basis $\ell_1, \ldots, \ell_6$ of $\mathbb{C}^6$. We choose $A_{R}^{\text{even}}$ such that in this basis it has the form

$$A_{R}^{\text{even}}(k, x) = \left( \begin{array}{cc} A_{L}^{11}(x) & A_{L}^{12}(x) V(x)^* \\ A_{L}^{21}(x) V(x) & A_{L}^{22}(x) \end{array} \right), \quad (4.82)$$

where we used a block matrix representation in the subspaces span($\ell_1, \ell_2, \ell_3$) and span($\ell_4, \ell_5, \ell_6$). Here the potentials $A_{L}^{ij}$ are chosen as in (3.29), and $V(x) \in U(3)$ is an arbitrary unitary matrix. We point out that the whole construction depends on the momentum $k$ of the homogeneous transformation in (4.80), as is made clear by the notation $A_{R}^{\text{even}}(k, x)$. Substituting the ansatz (4.82) in (4.80) and using that the columns of $L[k]^*$ are multiples of $\ell_1$ and $\ell_4$, we obtain

$$L[k] \exp \left(-i \int_x^y (A_{R}^{\text{even}})_{j} \xi^j \right) L[k]^* = \left( \begin{array}{cc} U_{L}^{11} & U_{L}^{12} \\ d U_{L}^{21} & U_{L}^{22} \end{array} \right) L[k] L[k]^* \quad (4.83)$$

where $U_{L}^{ij}$ as in (3.30) and $d = V_{L}^{1}$. Choosing $V$ such that $d$ coincides with the parameter $c$ in (3.30), we recover the transformation law of the left-handed component in (4.76). Repeating the above construction for the right-handed component (by flipping the chirality and replacing $L[k]$ by $R[k]$), we obtain precisely the transformation law (4.76).

In order to get into the microlocal setting, it is useful to observe that the $k$-dependence of $A_{R}^{\text{even}}$ can be described by a unitary transformation,

$$A_{R}^{\text{even}}(k, x) = W(k) A_{L}(x) W(k)^* \quad \text{with} \quad W(k) \in U(6). \quad (4.84)$$
Interpreting $W$ as a multiplication operator in momentum space and $A_L$ as a multiplication operator in position space, we can introduce $A_R^{\text{even}}$ as the operator product
\[ A_R^{\text{even}} = W A_L W^* . \] 
(4.85)

We point out that the so-defined potential $A_R^{\text{even}}$ is non-local. As the microlocal chiral transformation is non-local on the Compton scale, one might expect naively that the same should be true for $A_R^{\text{even}}$. However, $A_R^{\text{even}}$ can be arranged to be localized on the much smaller regularization scale $\varepsilon$, as the following argument shows: The $k$-dependence of $W$ is determined by the matrix entries of $L[k]$. The analysis in §4.4 shows that the matrix entries of $L[k]$ vary in $k$ on the scale of the energy $\varepsilon^{-1}$ (in contrast to the matrix $Z$, which in view of the factor $1/\sqrt{\Omega}$ in (4.33) varies on the scale $m$). Taking the Fourier transform, the operator $W$ decays in position space on the regularization scale.

This improved scaling has the positive effect that the error term caused by the quasilocal ansatz (4.85) is of the order $\varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}$. Hence the gauge phases enter the left-handed component of the error term (4.75) as
\[ \chi_L(\varepsilon) (1 + O(\varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}})) \text{ (vectorial) } 1C2 \text{ (deg = 1)} . \]

Carrying out a similar construction for the right-handed component, we obtain the following result.

**Proposition 4.10.** Introducing the potentials $A_{L/R}^{\text{even}}$ in the flipped Dirac operator (4.78) according to (4.81) and (4.85), the error term (4.75) in Proposition 4.7 transforms to
\[ \chi_L \left( \begin{array}{cc} U_{L11} & \tau U_{L12} \\ e U_{L21} & U_{L22} \end{array} \right) (1 + O(\varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}})) \text{ (vectorial) } 1C2 \text{ (deg = 1)} . \]
\[ \chi_R \left( \begin{array}{cc} V_{R11} & 0 \\ 0 & V_{R12} \end{array} \right) (1 + O(\varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}})) \text{ (vectorial) } 1C2 \text{ (deg = 1)} . \]

In this way, we have arranged that the EL equations are satisfied to degree five on the light cone. Note that the above construction involves the freedom in choosing the basis vectors $e_2, e_3, e_5, e_6$ as well as the unitary matrix $V$ in (4.82). This will be analyzed in more detail in §5.1.

We finally point out that the Dirac operator (4.79) in general violates the causality compatibility condition (2.48). This implies that the light-cone expansion of the auxiliary fermionic projector in general will involve unbounded line integrals. However, this causes no problems because these unbounded line integrals drop out when taking the sectorial projector. Thus the fermionic projector is again causal in the sense that it only involves bounded line integrals.

**4.6. The Energy-Momentum Tensor and the Curvature Terms.** Considering the contribution of the particle and anti-particle wave functions in (2.51) at the origin $x = y$ gives rise to the Dirac current terms as considered in §4.3 (for details see also §3 §7.2). We now go one order higher in an expansion around the origin $x = 0$. Setting $z = (x + y)/2$ and expanding in powers of $\xi$ according to
\[ \Psi(x) = \Psi(z - \xi/2) = \Psi(z) - \frac{1}{2} \xi^j \partial_j \Psi(z) + o(|\xi|) \]
\[ \Psi(y) = \Psi(z + \xi/2) = \Psi(z) + \frac{1}{2} \xi^j \partial_j \Psi(z) + o(|\xi|) \]
\[ \Psi(x) \overline{\Psi(y)} = \Psi(z) \overline{\Psi(z)} - \frac{1}{2} \xi^j \left( (\partial_j \Psi(z)) \overline{\Psi(z)} - \Psi(z) (\partial_j \overline{\Psi(z)}) \right) + o(|\xi|) , \]
we can write the contribution by the particles and anti-particles as

\[ P(x, y) \propto -\frac{1}{8\pi} \sum_{c=L/R} \chi_c \gamma_k \left( J^k_c - i\xi_l \hat{T}^{kl}_c \right) + o(|\xi|) + \text{(even contributions)}, \]

where

\[ (T^{kl}_{L/R})^{(i,\alpha)}_{(j,\beta)} = -\text{Im} \sum_p \psi^{(j,\beta)}_a \chi_{R/L} \gamma^k \partial^l \psi^{(i,\alpha)}_a + \text{Im} \sum_b \phi^{(j,\beta)}_b \chi_{R/L} \gamma^k \phi^{(i,\alpha)}_b, \]

and similar to (2.53), the hat denotes the sectorial projection. We denote the vectorial component by

\[ T^{kl} := T^{kl}_L + T^{kl}_R. \]

Taking the trace over the generation and isospin indices, we obtain the energy-momentum tensor of the particles and anti-particles.

**Lemma 4.11.** The tensors \( T^{kl}_{L/R}, \) (4.86), give the following contribution to the matrices \( K_{L/R} \) in (4.13) and (4.14),

\[ K_{L/R} \propto \hat{T}^{kl}_{L/R} \xi_k \xi_l \, K_8 + (\text{deg} < 4) + o(|\xi|^2), \]

where \( K_8 \) is the simple fraction

\[ K_8 = \frac{3}{16\pi} \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left[ T^{(-1)}_{[0]} T^{(0)}_{[0]} T^{(-1)}_{[0]} + \text{c.c.} \right]. \]

(note that \( K_8 \) differs from \( K_1 \) on page 37 in that the term \(-\text{c.c.}\) has been replaced by \(+\text{c.c.}\).)

The obvious idea for compensating these contributions to the EL equations is to modify the Lorentzian metric. At first sight, one might want to introduce a metric which depends on the isospin index. However, such a dependence cannot occur, as the following argument shows: The singular set of the fermionic projector \( P(x, y) \) is given by the pair of points \((x, y)\) with light-like separation. If the metric depended on the isospin components, the singular set would be different in different isospin components. Thus the light cone would “split up” into two separate light cones. As a consequence, the leading singularities of the closed chain could no longer compensate each other in the EL equations, so that the EL equations would be violated to degree five on the light cone.

Strictly speaking, this argument leaves the possibility to introduce a conformal factor which depends on the isospin (because a conformal transformation does not affect the causal structure). However, as the conformal weight enters the closed chain to degree five on the light cone, the EL equations will be satisfied only if the conformal factor is independent of isospin.

The above arguments readily extend to a chiral dependence of the metric: If the left- and right-handed component of the fermionic projector would feel a different metric, then the singular sets of the left- and right-handed components of the closed chain would again be different, thereby violating the EL equations to degree five (for a similar argument for an axial gravitational field see the discussion in [8, §9.3]).

Following these considerations, we are led to introducing a Lorentzian metric \( g_{ij} \). Linear perturbations of the metric were studied in [3 Appendix B]. The contributions...
to the fermionic projector involving the curvature tensor were computed by

\begin{align}
P(x, y) &\propto i \frac{R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k}{48} T^{(-1)} \\
&\quad + i \frac{R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k}{24} T^{(0)} + \xi \left( \text{deg} \leq 1 \right) + \left( \text{deg} < 1 \right),
\end{align}

where $R_{jk}$ denotes the Ricci tensor (we only consider the leading contribution in an expansion in powers of $|\vec{\xi}|/\ell_{\text{macro}}$). We refer to (4.88) and (4.89) as the curvature terms. More generally, in [12, Appendix A] the singularity structure of the fermionic projector was analyzed on a globally hyperbolic Lorentzian manifold (for details see also [17]). Transforming the formulas in [12, 17] to the coordinate system and gauge used in [3], one sees that (4.88) and (4.89) also hold non-perturbatively. In particular, the results in [12] show that, to the considered degree on the light cone, no quadratic or even higher order curvature expressions occur. In what follows, we consider (4.88) and (4.89) as a perturbation of the fermionic projector in Minkowski space. This is necessary because at present, the formalism of the continuum limit has only been worked out in Minkowski space. Therefore, strictly speaking, the following results are perturbative. But after extending the formalism of the continuum limit to curved space-time (which seems quite straightforward because the framework of the fermionic projector approach is diffeomorphism invariant), our results would immediately carry over to a globally hyperbolic Lorentzian manifold.

Let us analyze how the curvature terms enter the eigenvalues of the closed chain. We first consider the case when we strengthen (4.19) by assuming that

\begin{equation}
\varepsilon \ll \delta \ll \frac{1}{m} \left( m \varepsilon \right)^{\frac{\text{deg}}{2}}
\end{equation}

(the case $\delta \approx m \left( m \varepsilon \right)^{\frac{\text{deg}}{2}}$ will be discussed in Section 5). The assumption (4.90) makes it possible to omit the terms $\sim m^2 R_{ij}$.

**Lemma 4.12.** The curvature of the Lorentzian metric gives the following contribution to the matrices $K_L, K_R$ in (4.8),

\begin{align}
K_L, K_R \propto \frac{5}{24} \left( \frac{1}{48} R_{kl} \xi^k \xi^l \right) A_{xy}^{(0)} P^{(0)}(x, y) \\
+ \frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{\delta^2} R_{kl} \xi^k \xi^l \left( \begin{array}{cc} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{array} \right) K_{16} \\
+ m^2 R_{kl} \xi^k \xi^l \left( \text{deg} = 4 \right) + \left( \text{deg} < 4 \right) + o\left( |\vec{\xi}|^{-2} \right),
\end{align}

where $K_{16}$ is the following simple fraction of degree four,

\begin{equation}
K_{16} = \frac{27}{32} \left| T_{[\infty]} T_{[-\infty]}^{-1} \left( T_{[\infty]} T_{[-\infty]}^{-1} \right) + L_{[\infty]} L_{[-\infty]}^{-1} \right|
\end{equation}

(and $P^{(0)}(x, y)$ and $A_{xy}^{(0)}$ denote the vacuum fermionic projector and the closed chain of the vacuum, respectively).

**Proof.** The contribution (4.88) multiplies the fermionic projector of the vacuum by a scalar factor. Thus it can be combined with the vacuum fermionic projector $P^{(0)}$ to the expression

\begin{equation}
c_{xy} P^{(0)}(x, y) \quad \text{with} \quad c_{xy} := 1 + i \frac{1}{24} R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k.
\end{equation}
Hence the closed chain and the eigenvalues are simply multiplied by a common prefactor,

\[ A_{xy} = c_{xy}^2 A_{xy}^{(0)}, \quad \lambda_{ncs} = c_{xy}^2 \lambda_{ncs}^{(0)}. \]

As a consequence, the contribution (4.88) can be written in the form (4.91).

The summand (4.89) is a bit more involved, and we treat it in the \( \iota \)-formalism. The closed chain is computed by

\[ A_{xy} \approx \frac{3}{16} R_{jk} \bar{\xi}^j \gamma^k \xi^l T_{[0]}^{(0)} \bar{T}_{[0]}^{(-1)} \]

\[ + \frac{3}{16} R_{jk} \bar{\xi}^j \gamma^k T_{[0]}^{(0)} \bar{T}_{[0]}^{(-1)}. \] (4.95)

Similar as explained for the chiral contribution after (2.69), the eigenvalues \( \lambda_{nc+} \) are only perturbed by (4.95). More precisely,

\[ \lambda_{nc+} \approx \frac{3}{16} R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k T_{[0]}^{(0)} \bar{T}_{[0]}^{(-1)}, \]

and the other eigenvalues are obtained by complex conjugation (4.3). In particular, one sees that the eigenvalues are perturbed only by a common prefactor. Combining the perturbation with the eigenvalues of the vacuum, we obtain

\[ \lambda_{nc+} = \left( 1 + \frac{1}{48} R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k \right) \lambda_{nc+}^{(0)}. \]

In view of (4.3), this relation also holds for the eigenvalues \( \lambda_{nc-} \). We conclude that (4.89) can again be absorbed into (4.91). A short calculation using (4.6) shows that the contributions so far combine precisely to (4.91).

It remains to consider the effects of shear and of the general surface terms. The shear contribution is described by a homogeneous transformation of the spinors which is localized on the scale \( \varepsilon \) (for details see Appendix A). Since this transformation does not effect the macroscopic prefactor \( c_{xy} \) in (1.94), the eigenvalues are again changed only by a common prefactor. Hence (4.88) drops out of the EL equations for the shear states. The contributions (4.95) and (4.96), on the other hand, do not involve \( \iota \), and are thus absent for the shear states. We conclude that also (4.89) drops out of the EL equations for the shear states.

We finally consider the general surface states. As (4.95) is a smooth factor times the vacuum fermionic projector, the Ricci tensor again drops out of the EL equations. For the remaining term (4.96), the replacement rule (2.50) yields the contribution of the general mass expansion

\[ \chi_R P^\varepsilon(x, y) \times \frac{i}{24} R_{jk} \xi^j \gamma^k \frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{T_{[0]}^{(1)}} \left( T_{[R, 0]}^{(1)} \right)_0^0. \]

As a consequence,

\[ \chi_R A_{xy} \approx \frac{3}{48} R_{jk} \xi^j \gamma^k \frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{T_{[0]}^{(1)}} \left( T_{[R, 0]}^{(1)} \right)_0^0 \]

\[ \lambda_{nR+} \approx \frac{3}{48} R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k \frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{T_{[0]}^{(1)}} \left( T_{[R, 0]}^{(1)} \right)_0^0 \text{Tr}_{\mathbb{C}^2} \left( I_n \left( \begin{array}{c} 1 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{array} \right) \right) \]

\[ \mathcal{K}_L \approx \frac{27}{32} R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k \frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{T_{[0]}^{(1)}} \left( T_{[R, 0]}^{(1)} \right)_0^0 + \frac{1}{T_{[0]}^{(0)}} \left( T_{[0]}^{(0)} \right)_0^0 \left( T_{[R, 0]}^{(-1)} \right)_0^2 \left( \begin{array}{c} 1 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{array} \right). \]
Similarly,
\[
\chi_L A_{xy} \propto \frac{3}{48} R_{jk} \xi^j \gamma^k \frac{T_{\text{reg}}}{\delta^2} \left( T_{[0]}^{(1)} T_{[R,0]}^{(1)} 0 \right),
\]
giving the result.

5. Structural Contributions to the Euler-Lagrange Equations

In this section, we analyze additional contributions to the EL equations to degree four on the light cone. These contributions will not enter the field equations, but they are nevertheless important because they give constraints for the form of the admissible gauge fields and thus determine the structure of the interaction. For this reason, we call them structural contributions.

5.1. The Bilinear Logarithmic Terms. We now return to the logarithmic singularities on the light cone. In §4.3 we computed the corresponding contributions to the EL equations to the order \( o(|\xi|^{-3}) \) at the origin. In §4.4, we succeeded in compensating the logarithmic singularities by a microlocal chiral transformation. The remaining question is how the logarithmic singularities behave in the next order in a Taylor expansion around \( \xi = 0 \). It turns out that the analysis of this question yields constraints for the form of the admissible gauge fields, as is made precise by the following proposition.

**Proposition 5.1.** Assume that the parameter \( c_2 \) in (4.49) is sufficiently large and that the chiral potentials in (3.29) satisfy the conditions
\[
\begin{align*}
A_{L}^{11} - A_{R}^{N} &= \pm (A_{L}^{22} - A_{R}^{C}) \quad \text{at all space-time points, and} \\
A_{L}^{11} - A_{R}^{N} &= - (A_{L}^{22} - A_{R}^{C}) \quad \text{at all space-time points with } A_{L}^{12} \neq 0.
\end{align*}
\]
Moreover, in case (i) in (3.36) we assume that the MNS matrix and the mass matrix satisfy the relation
\[
\begin{pmatrix} 0 & \hat{U}_{MNS}^{*} \hat{Y} \\
\hat{U}_{MNS}^{*} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \hat{Y} \hat{Y} = \hat{Y} \hat{Y} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \hat{U}_{MNS}^{*} \\
\hat{U}_{MNS}^{*} & 0 \end{pmatrix}.
\]
Then one can arrange by a suitable choice of the basis \( \epsilon_1, \ldots, \epsilon_6 \) and the unitary matrix \( V \) in (4.82) that the contributions to the EL equations \( \sim |\xi|^{-3} \log |\xi| \) vanish.

If conversely (5.1) does not hold and if we do not assume any relations between the regularization parameters, then the EL equations of order \( |\xi|^{-3} \log |\xi| \) are necessarily violated at some space-time point.

The importance of this proposition is that it poses a further constraint on the form of the chiral gauge potentials.

The remainder of this section is devoted to the proof of Proposition 5.1. Generally speaking, our task is to analyze how the gauge phases enter the logarithmic singularities of the fermionic projector. We begin with the logarithmic current term
\[
\chi_L P_{\text{aux}}(x, y) \propto -2 \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 0|1] j_{L}^{j} \gamma^{j} T^{(1)},
\]
which gives rise to the last summand in (4.22) (and similarly for the right-handed component; for details see [8, eq. (B.16)–(B.17)] or [5, Appendix B]). According to the
general rules for inserting ordered exponentials (see [4 Definition 2.9] or [5 Definition 2.5.5]), the gauge potentials enter the logarithmic current term according to

$$-2 \chi_L \int_x^y [0,0|1] \ Pe^{-i \int_x^z A_L^\xi(z-x)_k j^L_\xi(z) \gamma_i} Pe^{-i \int_y^z A_L^\xi(y-z)_i} \ T^{(1)} \quad (5.3)$$

(where $Pe \equiv \text{Pexp}$ again denotes the ordered exponential (3.18)). Performing a Taylor expansion around $\xi = 0$ gives

$$\chi_L P^{\text{aux}}(x,y) \approx -\frac{1}{3} \chi_L j^L_{\xi} \left( \frac{x+y}{2} \right) \gamma_i \ T^{(1)} \quad (5.4)$$

$$+ \frac{i}{6} \chi_L \left( A_{L}^{\xi} j^L_{\xi} \gamma_i + j^L_i \gamma_i A_{L}^{\xi} \xi_j \right) \ T^{(1)} + o(|\xi|) \quad (5.5)$$

(note that in (5.5) it plays no role if the functions are evaluated at $x$ or $y$ because the difference can be combined with the error term).

We arranged by the microlocal chiral transformation that the logarithmic singularity of (5.4) is compensated by the second summand in (4.72). Since both (5.4) and (4.70) involve the argument $(x+y)/2$, the logarithmic singularities compensate each other even if $x$ and $y$ are far apart (up to the error terms as specified in (5.5) and Proposition 3.7). Thus it remains to analyze how the gauge phases enter (4.72). To this end, we adapt the method introduced after (4.80) to the matrix products in (4.49). Beginning with the left-handed component, the square of the mass matrix is modified by the gauge phases similar to (5.3) and (5.4), (5.5) by

$$\chi_L m^2 Y^2 \to \chi_L \int_x^y \ Pe^{-i \int_x^z A_L^\xi(z-x)_k m^2 Y^2 Pe^{-i \int_y^z A_L^\xi(y-z)_i} \ dz$$

$$= \chi_L m^2 Y^2 - \frac{i}{2} \chi_L m^2 \left( A_{L}^{\xi} j^L_{\xi} Y^2 + Y^2 A_{L}^{\xi} \xi_j \right) + o(|\xi|)$$

(for details see [4 Section 2 and Appendix A]). When using this transformation law in (4.49), we need to take into account that, similar to (4.80), the chiral gauge potentials $A_{L/R}$ must be replaced by $A_{R}^{\text{even}}_{L/R}$. Thus we need to compute the expectation values

$$\chi_L P(x,y) \approx -\frac{i}{2} m^2 L[k] \left( A_{R}^{\text{even}}[\xi] Y^2 + Y^2 A_{R}^{\text{even}}[\xi] \right) L[k]^* \quad (5.6)$$

where the square bracket again denotes a contraction, $A_{R}^{\text{even}}[\xi] \equiv (A_{R}^{\text{even}})^k_{\xi^k}$.

Again choosing the basis $\epsilon_1, \ldots, \epsilon_6$, the potential $A_{R}^{\text{even}}$ is of the form (4.82). Now we must treat the diagonal and the off-diagonal elements of $A_{L}$ separately. Obviously, the diagonal entries in (4.82) map the eigenvectors $\epsilon_1$ and $\epsilon_4$ to each other. Hence (5.6) gives rise to the anti-commutator

$$\chi_L P(x,y) \approx -\frac{i}{2} \left\{ \left( \begin{array}{cc} A_{L}^{11}[\xi] & 0 \\ 0 & A_{L}^{22}[\xi] \end{array} \right) , L[k] m^2 Y^2 L[k]^* \right\}$$

$$\approx -\frac{i}{2} \left\{ \left( \begin{array}{cc} A_{L}^{11}[\xi] & 0 \\ 0 & A_{L}^{22}[\xi] \end{array} \right) , \frac{\Omega}{2} v_L[k] + \epsilon_2(k) 1_{c^2} \right\} \quad (5.7)$$

For the off-diagonal elements of $A_{L}$, the matrices $V$ and $V^*$ in (4.82) make the situation more complicated. For example, the lower left matrix entry in (4.82) maps $\epsilon_1$ to a non-trivial linear combination of $\epsilon_4, \epsilon_5, \epsilon_6$, i.e. for any $6 \times 6$-matrix $B$,

$$L[k] B \left( \begin{array}{cc} 0 & 0 \\ V & 0 \end{array} \right) L[k]^* = \left( \begin{array}{cc} ||\epsilon_1||^2 (B_{11}^1 V_1^1 + B_{11}^5 V_3^1) & 0 \\ ||\epsilon_2|| ||\epsilon_1|| (B_{11}^5 V_3^1 + B_{11}^5 V_3^1) & 0 \end{array} \right). \quad (5.8)$$
Similarly, the upper right matrix entry in (4.82) maps $\epsilon_4$ to a non-trivial linear combination of $\epsilon_1, \epsilon_2, \epsilon_3$. As a consequence, the off-diagonal elements of $A_L$ yield a contribution to (5.6) of the general form

$$\chi_L P(x, y) \propto A_L^{12}[\xi] G(k) + A_L^{21}[\xi] G(k)^* \quad \text{with} \quad G = \begin{pmatrix} G_{11} & 0 \\ G_{12} & G_{22} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (5.9)$$

Here the $2 \times 2$-matrix $G(k)$ depends on $\epsilon_2$ and $v_L[k]$ as well as on the choice of the basis vectors $\epsilon_2, \epsilon_3, \epsilon_5, \epsilon_6$ and the matrix $V$ in (4.82). Counting the number of free parameters, one sees that $G(k)$ can be chosen arbitrarily, up to inequality constraints which come from the fact that $V$ must be unitary and that the entries of the matrix $m^2 Y^2$ in the basis $(\epsilon_1, \ldots, \epsilon_6)$ cannot be too large due to the Schwarz inequality. These inequality constraints can always be satisfied by suitably increasing the parameter $\epsilon_2$. For this reason, we can treat $G(k)$ as an arbitrary matrix involving three free real parameters.

The right-handed component of the microlocal chiral transformation can be treated similarly. The only difference is that the right-handed gauge potentials are already diagonal in view of (3.29). Thus we obtain in analogy to (5.7)

$$\chi_R P(x, y) \propto -\frac{i}{2} \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A_R^{N[\xi]} & 0 \\ 0 & A_R^{C[\xi]} \end{pmatrix}, \frac{\Omega}{2} v_R[k] + \epsilon_2(k) 1_{C^2} \right\}, \quad (5.10)$$

whereas (5.9) has no correspondence in the right-handed component.

Comparing (5.3) with (5.7), (5.9) and (5.10), one sees that the transformation laws are the same for the diagonal elements of $A_L$ and $A_R$. For the off-diagonal elements of $A_L$, we can always choose $G(k)$ such as to get agreement with (5.3). We conclude that by a suitable choice of $G(k)$ we can arrange that the transformation law (5.3) agrees with (5.7), (5.9) and (5.10). As a consequence, the logarithmic poles of the current terms are compensated by the microlocal chiral transformation, even taking into account the gauge phases to the order $o(|\xi|)$.

We next consider the logarithmic mass terms

$$\chi_L P^{aux}(x, y) \propto m^2 \chi_L \int_x^y [1, 0 | 0] YY A_L T^{(1)} \quad (5.11)$$

$$- m^2 \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 0 | 0] Y A_R Y T^{(1)} \quad (5.12)$$

$$+ m^2 \chi_L \int_x^y [0, 1 | 0] A_L YY T^{(1)} \quad (5.13)$$

which give rise to the summand (4.25) (for details see [8, eq. (B.28)–(B.30)] or [5, Appendix B]). Here the gauge phases enter somewhat differently, as we now describe.

**Lemma 5.2.** Contracting the logarithmic mass terms (5.11)–(5.13) with a factor $\xi$ and including the gauge phases, we obtain

$$\frac{1}{2} \text{Tr} \left( i \xi \chi_L P^{aux}(x, y) \right) \propto \frac{i m^2}{2} \left( A_L^j(z_1) YY - 2Y A_L^j(z_2) Y + YY A_L^j(z_3) \right) \xi_j T^{(1)} \quad (5.14)$$

$$+ \frac{m^2}{8} \left( (A_L^j \xi_j)(A_L^k \xi_k) YY + 2(A_L^j \xi_j) YY A_L^k \xi_k + YY (A_L^j \xi_j)(A_L^k \xi_k) \right) T^{(1)} \quad (5.15)$$

$$- \frac{m^2}{2} Y (A_R^j \xi_j)(A_R^k \xi_k) Y T^{(1)} + o(|\xi|^2), \quad (5.16)$$
where
\[ z_1 = \frac{3x + y}{4}, \quad z_2 = \frac{x + y}{2}, \quad z_3 = \frac{x + 3y}{4}. \]

The right-handed component is obtained by the obvious replacements \( L \leftrightarrow R \).

**Proof.** Following the method of [4, proof of Theorem 2.10], we first choose a special gauge and then use the behavior of the fermionic projector under chiral gauge transformations. More precisely, with a chiral gauge transformation we can arrange that \( A_L \) and \( A_R \) vanish identically along the line segment \( xy \). In the new gauge, the mass matrix \( Y \) is no longer constant, but it is to be replaced by dynamical mass matrices \( Y_L / R \) (see [4, eq. (2.8)] or [5, eq. (2.5.9)]). Performing the light-cone expansion in this gauge, a straightforward calculation yields

\[ 1 \over 2 \text{Tr} (i\xi \chi_L P^{\text{aux}}(x,y)) \approx m^2 (Y_L(x) Y_R(y) - \int_x^y (Y_L(z) Y_R(z)) dz) T^{(1)}. \]

Transforming back to the original gauge amounts to inserting ordered exponentials according to the rules in [4, Definition 2.9] or [5, Definition 2.5.5]. We thus obtain

\[ 1 \over 2 \text{Tr} (i\xi \chi_L P^{\text{aux}}(x,y)) \approx m^2 Y \left( \text{Pe}^{-i \int_x^y (\xi_L A_L + \xi_R A_R)} \right) T^{(1)} \]

(5.17)

Expanding in powers of \( \xi \) gives the result. \( \Box \)

The contribution (5.14) is the mass term which we already encountered in (4.25). In contrast to (5.4) and (4.70), the term (5.14) does not only depend on the variable \( (x + y)/2 \). However, forming the sectorial projection, for a diagonal potential \( A_L \) we obtain in view of (3.29) that

\[ \left( \dot{A}_L^j(z_1) Y \dot{Y} + \dot{Y} Y \dot{A}_L^j(z_3) \right) \xi_j = \left( A^j_L(z_1) + A^j_L(z_3) \right) \xi_j \dot{Y} \dot{Y} \]

(5.18)

This makes it possible to compensate the logarithmic singularity of (5.14) by the second term in (4.72), up to the specified error terms. For the off-diagonal potentials, the situation is more complicated and depends on the two cases in (3.36). If we are in case (i) and (5.2) is satisfied, then (5.18) also holds for the off-diagonal potentials. As a consequence, the logarithmic singularity of (5.14) can again be compensated by the second term in (4.72). However, if we do not impose (5.2), then it seems impossible to compensate the off-diagonal logarithmic terms by a microlocal chiral transformation (4.72). If we assume instead that we are in case (ii) in (3.36), then the spectral projectors \( I_n \) are diagonal (3.44), so that off-diagonal potentials are irrelevant as they do not enter the EL equations (4.7). We conclude that we can compensate the logarithmic singularities of (5.14) in case (i) under the additional assumptions (5.2), and in case (ii) without any additional assumptions.

The terms (5.15) and (5.16), on the other hand, are quadratic in the chiral gauge potentials. Analyzing whether these terms are compatible with the transformation law (5.7), (5.9) and (5.10) of the microlocal chiral transformation gives the following result.
Lemma 5.3. Consider the component of the fermionic projector which involves a bilinear tensor field and has a logarithmic pole on the light cone,

\[
P(x, y) \propto \left(\chi_L h^{ij}_L(x, y)\gamma_i\xi_j + \chi_R h^{ij}_R(x, y)\gamma_i\xi_j\right) T^{(1)}
\]

(5.19)

(where \(h^{ij}_{LR}\) is a smooth tensor field acting as a \(2 \times 2\) matrix on the isospin index). If (5.11) holds and \(\epsilon_2\) is sufficiently large, then one can arrange by a suitable choice of the basis \(\epsilon_1, \ldots, \epsilon_6\) and of the unitary matrix \(V\) in (4.82) that

\[
\chi_L h^{ij}_L + \chi_R h^{ij}_R = h^{ij}_Y Y
\]

(5.20)

(where \(h^{ij}_Y\) is a suitable tensor field which acts trivially on the isospin index). If conversely (5.1) does not hold, then (5.20) is necessarily violated at some space-time point.

Proof. We first analyze the right-handed component. If (5.14) is transformed according to (5.10), we could argue just as for the logarithmic current terms to conclude that the contribution of the form (5.19) vanishes. Therefore, it suffices to consider the terms obtained by subtracting from (5.14)–(5.16) the term (5.14) transformed according to (5.6), giving rise to the expression

\[
B_L := -\frac{m^2}{4} \left\{ A_{R}^{\text{even}}[\xi], (A_L[\xi](z_1)Y Y - 2Y A_R[\xi]Y + YY A_L[\xi]) \right\} T^{(1)}
\]

+ \frac{m^2}{8} \left( A_L[\xi]^2 YY + 2A_L[\xi]YY A_R[\xi] + YY A_L[\xi]^2 \xi_k \right) T^{(1)}

(5.21)

and similarly for the right-handed component. We must arrange that \(\hat{B}_L\) and \(\hat{B}_R\) are multiples of the identity matrix and coincide. We first analyze \(B_R\). Then according to (4.82), the potential \(A_L^{\text{even}}\) coincides with \(A_R\) and is sector diagonal. We thus obtain

\[
B_R = -\frac{m^2}{8} \left( A_R[\xi]^2 YY + 2A_R[\xi]YY A_R[\xi] + YY A_R[\xi]^2 \right) T^{(1)}
\]

\[
+ \frac{m^2}{2} \left( A_R[\xi]Y A_L[\xi]Y - Y A_L[\xi]^2 Y + Y A_L[\xi]Y A_R[\xi] \right) T^{(1)}.
\]

We decompose \(A_L\) into its diagonal and off-diagonal elements, denoted by

\[
A_L[\xi] = A_L^d[\xi] + A_L^o[\xi].
\]

A straightforward calculation using the identity

\[
A_L[\xi]^2 = A_L^d[\xi]^2 + A_L^o[\xi]^2 + \{A_L^d[\xi], A_L^o[\xi]\}
\]

provides

\[
B_R = -\frac{m^2}{2} Y \left( (A_R[\xi] - A_L^d[\xi])^2 + A_L^o[\xi]^2 \right) Y T^{(1)}
\]

(5.22)

\[
+ \frac{m^2}{2} Y \left\{ A_R[\xi] - A_L^d[\xi], A_L^o[\xi] \right\} Y T^{(1)}.
\]

(5.23)

Clearly, the matrix \(A_L^o[\xi]^2\) is a multiple of the identity matrix. The matrix \((A_R[\xi] - A_L^d[\xi])^2\), on the other hand, is a multiple of the identity matrix if and only if (5.1) holds. The anti-commutator in (5.23) is zero on the diagonal. It vanishes provided that (5.1)
holds. We conclude that the contributions (5.22) and (5.23) act trivially on the isospin index if and only if (5.1) holds. In this case,

$$B_R = -\frac{m^2}{2} Y \left( (A_R[\xi] - A^d_R[\xi])^2 + A^2_R[\xi] \right) Y T^{(1)}.$$  (5.24)

It remains to show that under the assumption (5.1), we can arrange that the corresponding left-handed contribution \(\hat{B}_L\) is also a multiple of the identity matrix, and that it coincides with (5.24). Now \(A^\text{even}_R\) is given by (4.82). The diagonal entries of \(A^\text{even}_R\) coincide with those of \(A_L\), giving rise to the contribution

$$B_L \approx -\frac{m^2}{4} \left\{ A^d_L[\xi], (A_L[\xi] YY - 2YA_R[\xi] Y + YYA_L[\xi]) \right\} T^{(1)}$$

$$+ \frac{m^2}{8} (A_L[\xi]^2 YY + 2A_L[\xi] YYA_L[\xi] + YYA_L[\xi]^2) T^{(1)} - \frac{m^2}{2} Y A_R[\xi]^2 Y T^{(1)} .$$

Similar as in (5.9), we can add contributions which involve \(A_{12}^L\) or \(A_{21}^L\). A short calculation shows that in this way, we can indeed arrange that \(\hat{B}_L\) coincides with \(\hat{B}_R\) as given by (5.24). □

Remark 5.4. (necessity of a mixing matrix) The proof of Lemma 5.3 even gives an explanation why the mixing matrix \(U_{\text{MNS}}\) must occur. Namely, the following consideration shows that the method of proof fails if \(U_{\text{MNS}}\) is trivial: Suppose that \(U_{\text{MNS}} = 1\). Then the parameter \(c\) in (3.32) is equal to one. As a consequence, the parameter \(d\) in (4.83) also equals one, implying that \(V_1 = 1\). Since \(V\) is unitary, it follows that \(V_1^2 = V_1^3 = 0\). As a consequence, the freedom in choosing \(V(x)\) does not make it possible to modify (5.8). Thus the matrix \(G(k)\) in (5.9) can no longer be chosen arbitrarily, in general making it impossible to arrange (5.20). This argument is worked out in more detail in [1, §3.5.4].

The next lemma gives the connection to the EL equations.

Lemma 5.5. The contributions to the EL equations \(\sim |\xi|^{-3} \log |\xi|\) vanish if and only if the condition (5.20) holds.

Proof. A direct computation shows that the terms of the form (5.19) contribute to the EL equations of the order \(|\xi|^{-3} \log |\xi|\) unless (5.20) holds. Therefore, our task is to show that it is impossible to compensate a term of the form (5.19) by a generalized microlocal chiral transformation. It clearly suffices to consider the homogeneous setting in the high-frequency limit as introduced in [8, §7.9]. Transforming to momentum space, the contribution (5.19) corresponds to the distribution

$$\gamma^i h_{ij} k^j \delta''(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) .$$  (5.25)

Having only three generations to our disposal, such a contribution would necessarily give rise to error terms of the form

$$\frac{1}{m^2} \gamma^i h_{ij} k^j \delta'(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{1}{m^2} \gamma^i h_{ij} k^j \delta(k^2) \Theta(-k^0) .$$

These error terms as large as the shear contributions by local axial transformation as analyzed in [8, §7.8], causing problems in the EL equations (for details see [8, §7.8 and Appendix C]). Instead of going through these arguments again, we here rule out (5.25) with the following alternative consideration: In order to generate the
contribution (5.25), at least one of the Dirac seas would have to be perturbed by a contribution with the scaling
\[
\frac{1}{m^4} \gamma^i h_{ij} k^j \delta(k^2 - m^2_\alpha) \Theta(-k^0).
\]
Due to the factor \(k^j\), this perturbation is by a scaling factor \(\Omega\) larger than the perturbations considered in [8, §7.9]. Thus one would have to consider a transformation of the form (cf. [8, eq. (7.58)])
\[
U = \exp(iZ) \quad \text{with} \quad Z = \mathcal{O}(\Omega^0).
\]
This transformation does not decay in \(\Omega\) and thus cannot be treated perturbatively. Treating it non-perturbatively, the resulting shear contributions violate the EL equations. □

Combining Lemmas 5.3 and 5.5 gives Proposition 5.1.

5.2. The Field Tensor Terms. We now come to the analysis of the contributions to the fermionic projector
\[
\chi_L P(x,y) \approx \frac{1}{4} \chi_L \xi \int_x^y F^{ij}_L \gamma_i \gamma_j T^{(0)} - \chi_L \xi \int_x^y [0,1 | 0] F^{ij}_L \gamma_j T^{(0)}
\]
\[
= \frac{1}{2} \chi_L \int_x^y (2\alpha - 1) \xi_i F^{ij}_L \gamma_j T^{(0)} + \frac{i}{4} \chi_L \int_x^y \epsilon_{ijkl} F^{ij}_L \xi^k \gamma^l T^{(0)}, \quad \text{(5.26)}
\]
which we refer to as the field tensor terms (see [3, Appendix A], [4, Appendix A] and [8, Appendix B]; note that here we only consider the phase-free contributions, to which gauge phases can be inserted according to the rules in [4]). In [8], the field tensor terms were disregarded because they vanish when the Dirac matrices are contracted with outer factors \(\xi\). Now we will analyze the field tensor terms in the \(\nu\)-formalism introduced in [24]. This will give additional constraints for the form of the admissible gauge fields (see relation (5.39) below).

In this section, the corrections in \(\tau_{\text{reg}}\) are essential. It is most convenient to keep the terms involving \(\tau_{\text{reg}}\) in all computations. We assume that we evaluate weakly for such a small vector \(\xi\) that we are in case (ii) in (3.36) (this will be discussed in Section 7). It then suffices to consider the sector-diagonal elements of the closed chain. Moreover, by restricting attention to the first or second isospin component, we can compute the spectral decomposition of the closed chain in the neutrino sector \((n = 1)\) and the chiral sector \((n = 2)\) separately. For a uniform notation, we introduce the notation
\[
M^{(l)}_n = \begin{cases} 
L^{(l)}_{[0]} & \text{if } n = 1 \\
\tau^{(l)}_{[0]} & \text{if } n = 2
\end{cases}
\]
with \(L^{(l)}_{[0]}\) as given by (3.9). Then the unperturbed eigenvalues are given by
\[
\lambda_{nL} = 9 T^{(-1)}_{[0]} M^{(0)}_n, \quad \lambda_{nR} = 9 M^{(-1)}_{n} T^{(0)}_{[0]}.
\]
Moreover, using the calculations
\[ \sum_{nL-} \frac{\chi_L P(x, y)}{|\lambda_{nL-}|} = 3i \chi_L \| T^{(0)}_n \| T^{(-1)}_n \| M_n^{(0)} \]
\[ \sum_{nR-} \frac{\chi_R P(x, y)}{|\lambda_{nR-}|} = 3i \chi_R \| T^{(0)}_n \| T^{(-1)}_n \| M_n^{(0)} \]
in (5.29), we can write the EL equations as
\[ \left( \Delta |\lambda_{nL-}| - \frac{1}{4} \sum_{n', c'} \Delta |\lambda_{n' c'}| \right) \frac{|T^{(-1)}_n \| M_n^{(0)} |}{|T^{(0)}_n \| M_n^{(0)} |} = 0 \]  
(5.27)
\[ \left( \Delta |\lambda_{nR-}| - \frac{1}{4} \sum_{n', c'} \Delta |\lambda_{n' c'}| \right) \frac{|M_n^{(-1)} \| T^{(0)}_n \|}{|T^{(-1)}_n \| M_n^{(0)} |} = 0 . \]  
(5.28)

Note that in the case \( \tau_{\text{reg}} = 0 \), these equations reduce to our earlier conditions (5.27) and (4.6).

Our task is to analyze how (5.26) influences the eigenvalues \( \lambda_{n-} \) of the closed chain.

**Lemma 5.6.** The field tensor terms (5.26) contribute to the eigenvalues \( \lambda_{n-} \) by

\[ \lambda_{nL-} \times \frac{3i}{2} \int_x^y (2\alpha - 1) \text{Tr} C^2 \left( I_n \tilde{F}^{ij}_{L} \tilde{\xi}_i \left( \epsilon^{(-1)}_0 \right) j \right) T^{(0)}_n \| M^{(0)}_n \]  
(5.29)
\[ + \frac{3}{4} \int_x^y \text{Tr} C^2 \left( I_n \epsilon_{ijkl} \tilde{F}^{ij}_{L} \tilde{\xi}_k \left( \epsilon^{(-1)}_0 \right) j \right) T^{(0)}_n \| M^{(0)}_n \]  
(5.30)
\[ \lambda_{nR-} \times \frac{3i}{2} \int_x^y (2\alpha - 1) \text{Tr} C^2 \left( I_n \tilde{F}^{ij}_{R} \tilde{\xi}_i \left( \epsilon^{(-1)}_0 \right) j \right) M^{(0)}_n \| T^{(0)}_n \]  
(5.31)
\[ - \frac{3}{4} \int_x^y \text{Tr} C^2 \left( I_n \epsilon_{ijkl} \tilde{F}^{ij}_{R} \tilde{\xi}_k \left( \epsilon^{(-1)}_0 \right) j \right) M^{(0)}_n \| T^{(0)}_n \]  
(5.32)

**Proof.** We first consider the effect of a left-handed field on the left-handed eigenvalues. Every summand in (5.26) involves a factor \( \xi T^{(0)} \). As the factor \( \epsilon^{(0)} \) gives no contribution (see (2.65)), we regularize (5.26) in the \( \epsilon \)-formalism by

\[ \chi_L P(x, y) \times \frac{1}{2} \chi_L \int_x^y (2\alpha - 1) \tilde{\xi}_i \tilde{F}^{ij}_{L} \gamma_j T^{(0)}_n \| + \frac{i}{4} \chi_L \int_x^y \epsilon_{ijkl} \tilde{F}^{ij}_{R} \tilde{\xi}_k \gamma^5 \gamma^j T^{(0)}_n \]  
(5.33)

(where the hat again denotes the sectorial projection). For computing the effect on the eigenvalues, we first multiply by the vacuum fermionic projector \( P^{(0)}(y, x) \) to form the closed chain. Then we multiply by powers of the vacuum chain (2.68) and take the trace. Since the number of factors \( \epsilon \) in (2.68) always equals the number of factors \( \tilde{\xi} \), and taking into account that (5.33) vanishes when contracted with a factor \( \tilde{\xi} \), we conclude that the factor \( P^{(0)}(y, x) \) must contain a factor \( \epsilon \). In view of (2.65), this means that we only need to take into account the contribution \( P^{(0)}(y, x) \times -3i \tilde{\epsilon}^{(-1)}_0 \tilde{L}^{(0)}_0 \). We thus obtain

\[ \chi_L A_{xy} \times \frac{3i}{2} \chi L \int_x^y (2\alpha - 1) \tilde{\xi}_i \tilde{F}^{ij}_{L} \gamma_j T^{(0)}_n \| \tilde{\epsilon}^{(-1)}_0 \| \tilde{M}^{(0)}_n \]  
\[ - \frac{3}{4} \chi L \int_x^y \epsilon_{ijkl} \tilde{F}^{ij}_{L} \tilde{\xi}_k \gamma^5 \gamma^j T^{(0)}_n \| \tilde{\epsilon}^{(-1)}_0 \| \tilde{M}^{(0)}_n . \]
Since the last Dirac factor involves \( \iota \), this contribution vanishes when multiplied by the first summand in (2.68). Thus our field tensor term only influences the eigenvalue \( \lambda_{nL} \). A short calculation gives (5.29) and (5.30). Similarly, a right-handed field only influences the corresponding right-handed eigenvalues by (5.31) and (5.32). The result follows by linearity. \( \square \)

Before going on, we remark that the above contributions do not appear in the standard formalism of the continuum limit, where all factors \( \xi \) which are contracted to macroscopic functions are treated as outer factors. In order to get back to the standard formalism, one can simply impose that \( F_{ij} \xi^i \iota^j = 0 \). However, this procedure, which was implicitly used in [8], is not quite convincing because it only works if the regularization is adapted locally to the field tensor. If we want to construct a regularization which is admissible for any field tensor (which should of course satisfy the field equations), then the contributions by Lemma 5.6 must be taken into account.

**Corollary 5.7.** **Introducing the macroscopic functions**

\[
a_{nL/R} = \frac{3i}{4} \int_x^y (2\alpha - 1) \text{Tr}_{c2} \left( I_n \tilde{F}_{L/R} \xi_j \left( i \left[ \xi_0 \right] \right)_j \right) \tag{5.34}
\]

\[
\pm \frac{3}{8} \int_x^y \text{Tr}_{c2} \left( I_n \epsilon_{ijkl} \tilde{F}_{L/R} \xi^k \left( i \left[ \xi_0 \right] \right)_l \right), \tag{5.35}
\]

the absolute values of the eigenvalues are perturbed by the field tensor terms (5.26) according to

\[
\Delta |\lambda_{nL}| = \left| \frac{M_n^{(0)}}{|T_0^{(0)}|} \right| \left( a_{nL} T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} + a_{nR} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(0)} \right),
\]

\[
\Delta |\lambda_{nR}| = \left| \frac{T_0^{(0)}}{|M_n^{(-1)}|} \right| \left( a_{nR} M_n^{(0)} M_n^{(-1)} T_0^{(0)} + a_{nR} M_n^{(-1)} M_n^{(0)} T_0^{(0)} \right).
\]

**Proof.** Writing the result of Lemma 5.6 as

\[
\Delta \lambda_{nL} = 2a_{nL} T_0^{(0)} M_n^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} \quad \Delta \lambda_{nR} = 2a_{nR} M_n^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(0)},
\]

we obtain

\[
\Delta |\lambda_{nL}| = \frac{1}{|T_0^{(-1)} M_n^{(0)}|} \text{Re} \left( a_{nL} T_0^{(0)} M_n^{(0)} M_n^{(-1)} T_0^{(-1)} \right) = \left| \frac{M_n^{(0)}}{|T_0^{(-1)}|} \right| \text{Re} \left( a_{nL} T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} \right).
\]

The calculation for \( \Delta |\lambda_{nR}| \) is analogous. \( \square \)

After these preparations, we are ready to analyze the EL equations (5.27) and (5.28). We begin with the case \( \tau_{\text{reg}} = 0 \). Then we can set \( M_n^{(0)} = T_0^{(0)} \), giving the conditions (4.7), where now

\[
\mathcal{K}_{nc} = \Delta |\lambda_{nL}| \left| \frac{T_0^{(-1)}}{|T_0^{(0)}|} \right| M_n^{(0)} = a_{nc} T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(-1)} + \tau_{nc} T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(0)}.
\]

This formula can be simplified further with the integration-by-parts rules. Namely, applying (2.39), we obtain

\[
0 = \nabla \left( T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(-1)} \right) = 2 T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(0)} + T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(0)} T_0^{(-1)} T_0^{(-1)}.
\]
Using this relation, we conclude that
\[ \mathcal{K}_{nc} = - \left( 2a_{nc} - \overline{a}_{nc} \right) T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \overline{T}_{[0]}^{(0)} = - \left( \text{Re}(a_{nc}) + 3 \text{Im}(a_{nc}) \right) T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \overline{T}_{[0]}^{(0)}. \]

If any non-trivial gauge field is present, the four macroscopic functions \( \text{Re}(a_{nc}) + 3 \text{Im}(a_{nc}) \) will not all be the same (note that even for a vectorial field which acts trivially on the isospin index, the contribution \((5.35)\) has opposite signs for \(a_{nL}\) and \(a_{nR}\)). This implies that \((1.7)\) can be satisfied only if we impose the regularization condition
\[ T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \overline{T}_{[0]}^{(0)} = 0 \quad \text{in a weak evaluation on the light cone.} \quad (5.36) \]

In order to compute the effect of \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \), we first note that the perturbations \( \Delta |\lambda_{2c}| \) do not involve \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \) (as is obvious from Corollary \(5.7\)). Moreover, the contribution of these eigenvalues to \((5.27)\) and \((5.28)\) for \( n = 2 \) is independent of \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \). In view of \((5.36)\), these contributions drop out of the EL equations. Next, the eigenvalue \( \lambda_{1L} \) contributes to \((5.27)\) and \((5.28)\) for \( n = 2 \) by
\[ - \frac{1}{4} \Delta |\lambda_{1L}| \left| T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \right| T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(0)} (a_{nL} T_{[0]}^{(0)} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} + \overline{a}_{nL} T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \overline{T}_{[0]}^{(0)}). \quad (5.37) \]

This is in general non-zero. Thus in order to allow for left-handed gauge fields in the neutrino sector, we need to impose additional conditions on the regularization functions. The simplest method is to impose that
\[ |L_{[0]}^{(0)}| = |T_{[0]}^{(0)}| (1 + \mathcal{O}((mc)^{2\text{phys}})) \quad \text{pointwise.} \quad (5.38) \]

Then \((5.37)\) again vanishes as a consequence of \((5.36)\), up to terms quadratic in \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \). We note that this is compatible with \((3.35)\) and poses an additional condition on the regularization in the case \( n = 0 \) and \( p = 0 \). We also remark that \((5.38)\) could be replaced by a finite number of equations to be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone. But as these equations are rather involved, we here prefer the stronger pointwise condition \((5.38)\). We also note that, in contrast to the condition \((5.36)\) for the regularization of ordinary Dirac seas, the relation \((5.38)\) imposes a constraint only on the right-handed high-energy states.

It remains to consider the terms involving \( T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \). These are \( \Delta |\lambda_{1R}| \) as well as the factor \( |M_{[R]}^{(-1)}| \) in \((5.28)\) in case \( n = 1 \). Collecting all the corresponding contributions to the EL equations, we get a finite number of equations to be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone. Again, we could satisfy all these equations by imposing suitable conditions on the regularization. However, these additional conditions would basically imply that \( T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} = 0 \) vanishes, meaning that there are no non-trivial regularization effects. For this reason, our strategy is not to impose any more regularization conditions. Then the EL equations \((5.27)\) and \((5.28)\) are satisfied if and only if there is no right-handed gauge field in the neutrino sector and if the vectorial component is trace-free, because only under these conditions all the equations involving \( T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \) or \( T_{[R,0]}^{(-1)} \) vanish. If the field tensor vanishes everywhere, we can arrange by a global gauge transformation that also the corresponding potential vanishes globally. We have thus derived the following result.

**Proposition 5.8.** Taking into account the contributions by the field tensor terms in Lemma \(5.6\), the EL equations to degree four can be satisfied only if the regularization
satisfies the conditions (5.36) and (5.38) (or a weaker version of (5.38) involving weak evaluations on the light cone). If no further regularization conditions are imposed, then the chiral potentials must satisfy at all space-time points the conditions

$$\text{Tr}(I_1 A_R) = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \text{Tr}(A_L + A_R) = 0,$$

where $I_1$ is the projection on the neutrino sector. If conversely (5.36), (5.38) and (5.39) are satisfied, then the field tensor terms do not contribute to the EL equations of degree four.

We note for clarity that in the vacuum, the operator $I_1$ coincides with the projection operator $I_1$ in (3.39). However, the operator $I_1$ in general depends on the gauge potentials. The operator $I_1$, however, is a fixed matrix projecting on the neutrino sector. The reason why $I_1$ comes up is that the conditions (5.39) are derived in case (ii) in (3.36) where the matrix $I_1$ is given by (3.44).

6. The Effective Action in the Continuum Limit

6.1. Treating the Algebraic Constraints. Let us briefly review our general strategy for deriving the effective field equations. The starting point is the fermionic projector of the vacuum, being composed of solutions of the free Dirac equation (cf. (2.45))

$$(i\partial - mY) \Psi = 0.$$  

As explained in §4.3, a wave function $\Psi$ gives rise to a contribution to the fermionic projector of the form (cf. (2.51))

$$- \frac{1}{2\pi} \overline{\Psi}(x)\Psi(x),$$  

which enters the EL equations. Our method for satisfying the EL equations is to introduce a suitable potential into the Dirac equation (see (2.46))

$$(i\partial + B - mY) \Psi = 0.$$  

After compensating the resulting logarithmic singularities by a microlocal chiral transformation (see §4.4), we can hope that the remaining contributions to the fermionic projector by the bosonic current can compensate the contribution by the Dirac current (6.1). This general procedure was worked out for an axial potential in [8].

In the present setting of two sectors, the situation is more complicated because the potential $B$ in (6.2) must satisfy additional equations which involve the chiral potentials without derivatives (see (3.29) and the conditions arising from the structural contributions in Section 5). We refer to these equations as the algebraic constraints. These constraints imply that the corresponding bosonic current must be of a specific form. As a consequence, we cannot expect to compensate an arbitrary contribution of the form (6.1) in the EL-equations (3.3). Graphically speaking, we can only hope to compensate those contributions to (6.1) which are “parallel” to the bosonic degrees of freedom. The problem is that it is not obvious how to decompose the Dirac current (6.1) into contributions “parallel” and “orthogonal” to the degrees of freedom of the bosonic current, simply because there is no obvious scalar product on the contributions to $Q$. The goal of this section is to give a systematic procedure for deriving the effective field equations in the continuum limit, taking into account the algebraic constraints. The effective field equations will be recovered as the critical points of a corresponding effective action.
In order to understand the concept behind the derivation of the effective action, one should keep in mind that we regard only the fermionic states (including the states of the Dirac sea) as the basic physical objects. The bosonic fields, however, are merely auxiliary objects used for describing the collective behavior of the fermionic states. With this in mind, in contrast to the usual Lagrangian formalism, we do not need to derive the Dirac equation from an action principle. On the contrary, the Dirac equation (6.2) serves as the definition of $B$ introduced for describing the behavior of the fermionic states. Then the appearance of algebraic constraints like (3.29) can be understood as constraints for the admissible variations of the fermionic projector. Such constraints are typically handled by demanding that the action should be critical only under the admissible variations. Thus in our setting, the natural idea is to demand that the first variation of the action (see [8, eq. (5.18)])

$$\delta S_{\mu}[P] = 2 \text{tr} (Q \delta P) \quad (6.3)$$

should vanish for all variations $\delta P$ which are admissible in the sense that they are described by variations of $B$ which satisfy the algebraic constraints. Unfortunately, this method cannot be implemented directly because, in order to obtain information independent of regularization details, the operator $Q$ must be evaluated weakly on the light-cone (see [8, §5.1 and §5.2]). This means that the kernel $\delta P(x,y)$ of the operator $\delta P$ must satisfy the two conditions that it be smooth and that it vanishes in a neighborhood of the diagonal $x = y$,

$$\delta P(x,y) \in C^\infty(M \times M) \quad \text{and} \quad \delta P(x,y) = 0 \text{ unless } |\xi| \gg \varepsilon \quad (6.4)$$

However, the perturbation $\delta P$ corresponding to a perturbation of the bosonic potentials does not satisfy these two conditions, because in this case $\delta P(x,y)$ is singular on the light cone and non-zero at $x = y$.

Our method to overcome this shortcoming is to take $\delta P$ as obtained from a variation of $B$, and to arrange the additional requirements (6.4) by smoothing $\delta P(x,y)$ and by setting it to zero in a neighborhood of $x = y$. This procedure can be understood as follows: The bosonic potentials satisfying the algebraic constraints tell us about the admissible directions for varying $P$. But these variations need not necessarily be performed for all the Dirac states simultaneously. Instead, it seems reasonable that only the low-energy states (i.e. the states with frequencies $\ll \varepsilon^{-1}$) are varied. Then $\delta P$ is smooth. Moreover, by combining different such variations, one can arrange that $\delta P$ vanishes at the origin. The resulting variations satisfy (6.4), and we use them for testing in (6.3).

The goal of this section is to use the just-described method to derive effective EL equations in the continuum limit. For clarity, we first treat the chiral gauge field, whereas the gravitational field will be considered afterwards in a similar manner. In preparation, we note that quantities like currents and fields take values in the Hermitian $6 \times 6$-matrices and have a left- and right-handed component. Thus, taking the direct sum of the two chiral components, it is useful to introduce the real vector space

$$\mathcal{S}_6 := \text{Symm}(\mathbb{C}^6) \oplus \text{Symm}(\mathbb{C}^6), \quad (6.5)$$

where $\text{Symm}(\mathbb{C}^6)$ denotes the Hermitian $6 \times 6$-matrices. For example, the Dirac current [121] can be regarded as an element of $\mathcal{S}_6$,

$$J := (J_L, J_R) \in \mathcal{S}_6$$
(here we disregard the tensor indices, which will be included later in a straightforward way). In the EL equations, the Dirac current enters only after forming the sectorial projection. In what follows, it is convenient to consider the sectorial projection as an operation
\[
\hat{\cdot} : \mathcal{G}_6 \to \mathcal{G}_2 \subset \mathcal{G}_6, \tag{6.6}
\]
where in the last inclusion we regard a symmetric $2 \times 2$-matrix as a $6 \times 6$-matrix which acts trivially on the generation index (and $\mathcal{G}_2$ denotes similar to (6.5) the chiral Hermitian $2 \times 2$-matrices). The chiral gauge potential and current (4.20) can also be regarded as elements of $\mathcal{G}_6$. However, they can take values only in a subspace of $\mathcal{G}_6$, as we now make precise. We denote the gauge group corresponding to the admissible gauge potentials by $G \subset U(6)_{L} \times U(6)_{R}$ and refer to it as the dynamical gauge group (recall that in §3.2 we found the group (3.28), and taking into account the additional constraints encountered in Section 5, the dynamical gauge group is a proper subgroup of (3.28)). The dynamical gauge potentials are elements of the corresponding Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g} = T_e G$, the so-called dynamical gauge algebra. It can be identified with a subspace of $\mathcal{G}_6$. The dynamical potentials and corresponding bosonic currents take values in the dynamical subspace,
\[
\mathcal{A} := (A_L, A_R) \in \mathfrak{g} \quad \text{and} \quad (j_L, j_R) \in \mathfrak{g}. \tag{6.7}
\]
We now evaluate (6.3) for $\delta P$ being a variation in direction of the dynamical subspace. In order to evaluate this equation, we need to analyze how the potentials and currents enter the EL equations (4.7). We consider the contributions to degree four on the light cone after compensating the logarithmic poles and evaluate weakly on the light cone. The corresponding contribution $\Delta Q$ is given in Corollary 4.2. In order to determine the variation $\delta P$, one should keep in mind that it is vectorial, and that the the left- and right-handed gauge potentials affect the left- and right-handed components of $\delta P$, respectively. Moreover, $\delta P$ involves a sectorial projection. We thus obtain
\[
\text{Tr}_{C^8} (\Delta Q (\chi_L \hat{A}_L + \chi_R \hat{A}_R) \neq 0 \quad \text{for all } \mathcal{A} = (A_L, A_R) \in \mathfrak{g}. \tag{6.8}
\]
Here $u$ is an arbitrary vector field, whose only purpose is to get a contraction with the factor $\xi$ in (4.13). As explained before (4.12), we want to consider the stronger conditions which are independent of the projectors $I_n$. Using the form of $\Delta Q$ in Corollary 4.2, we thus obtain the conditions
\[
\text{Tr}_{C^2} (Q_L \hat{A}_R + Q_R \hat{A}_L) = 0 \quad \text{for all } \mathcal{A} = (A_L, A_R) \in \mathfrak{g}. \tag{6.9}
\]
(see also (4.15) and note that the chirality flips at the factor $\xi$ in (4.13)).

In order to recover (6.9) from an effective variational principle, our goal is to choose a Dirac Lagrangian $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}}$ and a Yang-Mills Lagrangian $\mathcal{L}_{\text{YM}}$ such that varying the gauge potentials in the effective gauge algebra gives the left side of (6.9) with $A$ replaced by the variation $\delta A$ of the potentials. In order to keep track of the contractions of the tensor indices, it is useful to again use the matrix-valued vector field $\gamma^k_{L/R}$ in Lemma 4.4.

Similar to (4.14) we set
\[
Q^k := \gamma^k - \frac{1}{4} \text{Tr}_{C^2} (\gamma^k_{L} + \gamma^k_{R}) \mathbb{1}_{C^2}. \tag{6.10}
\]
Then we would like to choose $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}}$ and a Yang-Mills Lagrangian $\mathcal{L}_{\text{YM}}$ such that
\[
K(\varepsilon, \xi) \frac{\delta}{\delta A} (\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{YM}}) = \text{Tr}_{C^2} (Q^k_L [\hat{\delta}, A] (\delta \hat{A}_R)_k + Q^k_R [\hat{\delta}, A] (\delta \hat{A}_L)_k) \tag{6.11}
\]
for any $\delta A = (\delta A_L, \delta A_R) \in g$. The square brackets $[\hat{J}, A]$ clarify the dependence on the chiral potentials and on the sectorial projection of the Dirac current. Our notation also points out that for example the left-handed component $Q^L_k$ may depend on both the left- and right-handed components of the currents (as becomes explicit in (4.22–4.29)). The way the equation (6.11) is to be understood is that the right side is to be evaluated weakly according to (2.31). We demand that the dependence on the regularization length $\varepsilon$ and on the direction $\xi$ can be absorbed in the prefactor $K$. If this has been accomplished, the continuum limit of the EL equations corresponding to the causal action principle can be recovered by seeking for critical points of the effective action

$$S_{\text{eff}} = \int_{\mathbb{R}^4} (\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{YM}}) \, d^4x. \quad (6.12)$$

The above construction can be adapted in a straightforward way to the gravitational field. To this end, we consider the contribution to $\Delta Q$ by the energy-momentum and the Ricci tensor as computed in §4.6. Since the gravitational field couples to the right- and left-handed components of all fermions in the same way, it corresponds to a variation in the direction $(1, 1) \in S^2$. We thus obtain in analogy to (6.8) the condition

$$\text{Tr}_C (\Delta Q \, \hat{\mathcal{J}}) = 0. \quad (6.13)$$

Similar to (6.11) we want to recover this condition as the critical point of an effective Lagrangian. In order to recover the Einstein equations, we want to add the Einstein-Hilbert action. Moreover, in curved space-time one clearly replaces the integration measure in (6.12) by $\sqrt{-\det g} \, d^4x$, where $g$ again denotes the Lorentzian metric. Moreover, the Dirac action should clearly involve the Dirac operator in curved space-time. In order to treat the tensor indices properly, we introduce a matrix-valued symmetric 2-tensor $Q^{kl}$ by

$$\text{Tr}_C (\Delta Q \, \hat{\mathcal{J}}) = i\varepsilon_j u^j Q^{kl}[\hat{T}, g] \xi_k \xi_l. \quad (6.14)$$

(where the factors $\xi_i \xi_j$ are precisely those in (1.87) and similarly in Lemma 4.12). The square bracket $[\hat{T}, g]$ clarifies the dependence on the energy-momentum tensor (which involves a sectorial projection) and the metric. Our goal is to find an effective action such that, in analogy to (6.11),

$$iK(\varepsilon, \xi) \frac{\delta}{\delta g} \left( (\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{YM}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{EH}}) \sqrt{-\text{deg} g} \right) = Q^{kl}[\hat{T}, g] \delta g_{kl} \quad (6.15)$$

with the Einstein-Hilbert action

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{EH}} = \frac{1}{\kappa(\varepsilon, \delta)} (R + 2\Lambda) \quad (6.16)$$

(where $R$ denotes scalar curvature and $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ is the cosmological constant). We point out that the gravitational coupling constant $\kappa$ may depend on the length scales $\varepsilon$ and $\delta$ (recall that the parameter $\delta$ gives the length scale for the shear contributions; see (2.33) and (2.34)). The dependence on $\varepsilon$ or $\delta$ is needed in order to take into account that the gravitational constant is not dimensionless. This procedure will also make it possible to link the Planck length to the regularization lengths $\varepsilon$ or $\delta$.

We thus obtain the effective action

$$S_{\text{eff}} = \int_M (\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{YM}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{EH}}) \sqrt{-\text{deg} g} \, d^4x. \quad (6.17)$$
Varying the chiral potentials in $g$ gives the bosonic field equations, whereas varying the metric gives the equations for gravity. We again point out that the variation of the effective action must always be performed under the constraint that the Dirac equation (6.2) holds. Thus we do not need to derive the Dirac equation from the effective action. Instead, the Dirac equation holds a-priori and must be respected by the variation. The resulting procedure for computing variations will be explained in §6.3.

6.2. The Effective Dirac Action. Our goal is to find Lagrangians such that (6.11) and (6.15) hold. The main task is to choose the Dirac Lagrangian such that the coupling of the Dirac wave functions to the chiral potentials and the gravitational fields as described by $\Delta Q$ is compatible with the variations of the Dirac Lagrangian in (6.11) and (6.15). Usually, the coupling of the Dirac wave functions to the bosonic fields is described by the Dirac Lagrangian, which in our context takes the form

$$L_{\text{Dirac}} = \text{Re} \bar{\psi}(i\gamma + B - mY)\psi$$

(note that using the symmetry of the Dirac operator, the real part can be omitted if one integrates over space-time). The corresponding Dirac action has the nice feature that varying the Dirac wave functions gives the Dirac equation (2.46). The standard method would be to add to (6.18) a Yang-Mills Lagrangian, in such a way that varying the bosonic potentials gives effective EL equations (6.9). However, in our situation this standard method does not work, because according to (6.11), the effective EL equations involve the sectorial projection of the Dirac current, whereas varying $B$ in (6.18) yields the Dirac current without a sectorial projection. A similar problem occurs when we try to recover the equations for the gravitational field (6.15) from a variational principle. The standard procedure is to add the Einstein-Hilbert action. But then varying the metric would give the energy-momentum tensor of the Dirac wave functions without a sectorial projection, in contrast to the sectorial projection $\hat{T}_{ij}$ in (6.15).

In order to resolve this problem, we need to modify the Dirac Lagrangian in such a way that the sectorial projection is built in correctly. It is now convenient to describe the sectorial projection by a projection operator $\hat{\pi}$,

$$\hat{\pi} = \frac{1}{3} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} : \mathbb{C}^3 \to \mathbb{C}^3 ,$$

acting on the generations. In agreement with our earlier notation, $\hat{\pi}$ acts on $\mathbb{C}^6$ as the block-diagonal matrix

$$\begin{pmatrix} \hat{\pi} & 0 \\ 0 & \hat{\pi} \end{pmatrix} : \mathbb{C}^6 \to \mathbb{C}^6 .$$

Likewise, $\hat{\pi}$ may act on the left- and right-handed components. Then the operation in (6.6) can be realized by acting with $\hat{\pi}$ from the left and from the right; for example

$$\hat{\mathcal{J}} = 9 \hat{\pi} \hat{\mathcal{J}} \hat{\pi} .$$

The most obvious idea is to insert a sectorial projection into (6.18),

$$\text{Re} \left( \bar{\psi} 3\hat{\pi} (i\gamma + B - mY)\psi \right) .$$

Then varying the metric gives the desired energy-momentum term $\hat{T}_{ij}$. However, when varying the chiral potential, the mixing matrix $U_{\text{MNS}}$ comes up in the wrong way. This
leads us to also take the sectorial projection of $\mathcal{B}$. We thus choose

$$
\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} = \text{Re} \left( \bar{\psi} 3\tau (i\partial + \tilde{\pi}\mathcal{B}\tilde{\pi} - mY)\psi \right).
$$

Then varying the bosonic potentials also gives agreement with the sectorial projections of the factors $\hat{g}_L$ and $\hat{g}_R$ in (6.9). We point out that varying the Dirac wave functions in the Dirac action corresponding to (6.18) does not give the Dirac equation (6.18). This is not a principal problem because, as explained in §6.1, in our approach the Dirac equation holds trivially as the defining equation for the bosonic potentials. Nevertheless, at first sight it might seem that the Dirac Lagrangian (6.18) should be inconsistent with the Dirac equation. In §6.3 we will see that there are indeed no inconsistencies if the variations are handled properly.

There is one more modification which we want to apply to the Dirac Lagrangian (6.19). Namely, in order to have more freedom to modify the coupling of the right-handed neutrinos to the gravitational field, we insert a parameter $\tau$ into $\tilde{\pi}$ which modifies the left-handed component of the upper isospin component,

$$
\tilde{\pi}_\tau := \begin{pmatrix} 1 + \tau \chi_L & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \tilde{\pi} \quad \text{with} \quad \tau \in \mathbb{R}.
$$

We define our final Dirac Lagrangian by

$$
\mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} = \text{Re} \left( \bar{\psi} 3\tau (i\partial + \tilde{\pi}_\tau\mathcal{B}\tilde{\pi}_\tau - mY)\psi \right).
$$

If a left-handed gauge field $\mathcal{B}$ is varied, then the parameter $\tau$ drops out because the right-handed neutrinos do not couple to the chiral gauge fields. However, the parameter $\tau$ will make a difference when considering variations of the metric. We will come back to this point in Section 8 below.

The effective action is obtained as usual by adding to (6.20) suitable Lagrangians involving the chiral gauge field and scalar curvature. They will be worked out in detail in Sections 7 and 8.

6.3. Varying the Effective Dirac Action. We now explain how the effective action (6.12) with the Dirac Lagrangian (6.20) is to be combined with the Dirac equation (6.2) (or similarly the action (6.17) with the corresponding Dirac equation in the gravitational field).

We again point out that in our approach, the Dirac equation (6.2) is trivially satisfied, because it serves as the definition of the bosonic potentials in $\mathcal{B}$. The bosonic potentials in $\mathcal{B}$ are merely a device for describing the behavior of the wave functions $\psi$ in the fermionic projector. With this concept in mind, the method of varying the bosonic potentials for fixed wave functions (as used after (6.12)) is not the proper procedure. The procedure is not completely wrong, because in many situations the wave functions do not change much when varying the bosonic potentials, and in these cases it is admissible to consider them as being fixed. But in general, it is not a consistent procedure to vary $\mathcal{B}$ for fixed $\psi$, because then the Dirac equation (6.2) will be violated. Taking the Dirac equation as the definition of $\mathcal{B}$, the only way to vary the bosonic potentials is to also vary the wave functions according to (6.2), and to consider the the effective Lagrangian under the resulting joint variations of $\mathcal{B}$ and $\psi$.

Let us compute such variations, for simplicity for a variation of the bosonic potential in Minkowski space (the method works similarly in the presence of a gravitational field and for variations of the metric).
Proposition 6.1. Varying the potential \( B \) in the Dirac action corresponding to the Dirac Lagrangian (6.20) under the constraint that the Dirac equation (6.2) holds, we obtain the first variation
\[
\delta S_{\text{Dirac}} = \text{Re} \int_M \langle \psi | X_\tau (\delta B) \rangle \psi \rangle \ d^4 x \tag{6.21}
\]
\[
- \text{Re} \int_M \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (\delta B) (1 - \bar{\pi}) \rangle \psi \rangle \ d^4 x \tag{6.22}
\]
\[
- \text{Re} \int_M \left( \langle \delta \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau B (1 - \bar{\pi}) \rangle \psi \rangle + \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (1 - \bar{\pi}) B \delta \psi \rangle \right) d^4 x \tag{6.23}
\]
\[
- \text{Re} \int_M \langle \psi | \left( (B - mY) X_\tau^\dagger - X_\tau (B - mY) \right) \delta \psi \rangle \rangle \ d^4 x \tag{6.24}
\]
(where \( \langle \psi | \phi \rangle \equiv \bar{\psi} \phi \) denotes the spin scalar product). Here \( X_\tau \) is the matrix
\[
X_\tau = \begin{pmatrix} 1 + \tau \chi L & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \otimes \mathbf{1}, \tag{6.25}
\]
and the variation of the wave function \( \delta \psi \) is given by
\[
\delta \psi = -\tilde{s} (\delta B) \psi , \tag{6.26}
\]
where \( \tilde{s} \) is a Green's function of the Dirac equation (6.2),
\[
(i\partial + B - mY) \tilde{s} = \mathbf{1} .
\]

Proof. Let \( \delta B \) be the variation of \( B \). In order to satisfy the Dirac equation, we must vary the wave function according to (6.26). The variation of the Dirac wave function does not have compact support, making it necessary to take into account boundary terms when integrating by parts. In order to treat these boundary terms properly, we multiply the variation of the wave function by a test function \( \eta \in C^\infty_0 (M) \). Thus instead of (6.26) we consider the variation
\[
\tilde{\delta} \psi = -\eta \tilde{s} (\delta B) \psi .
\]
At the end, we will remove the test function by taking the limit \( \eta \rightarrow 1 \) in which \( \eta \) goes over to the function constant one.

The resulting variation of the Dirac action is computed by
\[
\delta S_{\text{Dirac}} = \int_M \delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{Dirac}} \ d^4 x = \text{Re} \int_M \left( \langle \tilde{\delta} \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (i\partial + \tilde{\pi} B \tilde{\pi} - mY) \psi \rangle \right.
\]
\[
+ \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (\delta (\tilde{\pi} B \tilde{\pi})) \psi \rangle + \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (i\partial + \tilde{\pi} B \tilde{\pi} - mY) \tilde{\delta} \psi \rangle \right) d^4 x .
\]
Using that \( \psi \) satisfies the Dirac equation, and that \( \tilde{\delta} \psi \) satisfies the inhomogeneous Dirac equation
\[
(i\partial + B - mY) \tilde{\delta} \psi = -i (\partial \eta) \tilde{s} (\delta B) \psi - \eta (\delta B) \psi ,
\]
we obtain
\[
\delta S_{\text{Dirac}} = \text{Re} \int_M \eta \left( \langle \delta \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (\tilde{\pi} B \tilde{\pi} - B) \psi \rangle + \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (\tilde{\pi} B \tilde{\pi} - B) \delta \psi \rangle \right) d^4 x
\]
\[
+ \text{Re} \int_M \left( \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (\delta (\tilde{\pi} B \tilde{\pi}) - \eta (\delta B)) \psi \rangle - i \langle \psi | 3 \tilde{\pi}_\tau (\partial \eta) (\tilde{s} (\delta B) \psi \rangle \right) d^4 x .
\]
In the last term we decompose the matrix \(3\tilde{\pi}_\tau\) into its diagonal and off-diagonal parts,
\[3\tilde{\pi}_\tau = X_\tau + Z\]
and \(X_\tau\) according to \((6.25)\). Thus, using \((6.26)\),
\[-i \int_M \langle \psi | 3\tilde{\pi}_\tau (\partial \eta) \left( \bar{s} (\delta B) \psi \right) \rangle d^4x \]
\[= i \int_M (\partial j \eta) \langle \psi | X_\tau \gamma^j \delta \psi \rangle d^4x + i \int_M (\partial j \eta) \langle \psi | Z \gamma^j \delta \psi \rangle d^4x.\]

In the first integral we integrate by parts,
\[i \int_M (\partial j \eta) \langle \psi | X_\tau \gamma^j \delta \psi \rangle d^4x \]
\[= \int_M \eta \left( -i \delta \psi \gamma^j X_\tau \delta \psi - \langle \psi | X_\tau \gamma^j i \partial_j (\delta \psi) \rangle \right) d^4x.\]

The pseudoscalar matrix in \(X_\tau\) anti-commutes with the Dirac matrix \(\gamma^j\). Since the pseudoscalar matrix is anti-symmetric with respect to the spin scalar product, we can express this anti-commutation by
\[X_\tau \gamma^j = \gamma^j X_\tau^* .\]

Then we can rewrite the partial derivatives \(i \partial_j\) with the Dirac equation \((6.2)\) and the inhomogeneous Dirac equation equation for \(\delta \psi\),
\[(i \bar{\psi} + B - mY) \delta \psi = - (\delta B) \psi .\]

This gives
\[i \int_M (\partial j \eta) \langle \psi | X_\tau \gamma^j \delta \psi \rangle d^4x \]
\[= \int_M \eta \left( -i \delta \psi \gamma^j X_\tau \delta \psi - \langle \psi | X_\tau \gamma^j i \partial_j (\delta \psi) \rangle \right) d^4x \]
\[= - \int_M \eta \langle \psi | \left( (B - mY) X_\tau^* - X_\tau (B - mY) \right) (\delta \psi) \rangle d^4x \]
\[+ \int_M \eta \langle \psi | X_\tau (\delta B) \psi \rangle d^4x.\]

Combining all the terms, we obtain
\[\delta S_{\text{Dirac}} = \text{Re} \int_M \eta \left( -\langle \delta \psi | 3\tilde{\pi}_\tau (\bar{\pi} B \pi - B) \psi \rangle + \langle \psi | 3\tilde{\pi}_\tau (\bar{\pi} B \pi - B) \delta \psi \rangle \right) d^4x \quad (6.27)\]
\[+ \text{Re} \int_M \langle \psi | 3\tilde{\pi}_\tau (\delta (\bar{\pi} B \pi) - \eta (\delta B)) \psi \rangle d^4x \quad (6.28)\]
\[+ \text{Re} \int_M i(\partial j \eta) \langle \psi | Z \gamma^j \delta \psi \rangle d^4x \quad (6.29)\]
\[- \text{Re} \int_M \eta \langle \psi | \left( (B - mY) X_\tau^* - X_\tau (B - mY) \right) (\delta \psi) \rangle d^4x \quad (6.30)\]
\[+ \text{Re} \int_M \eta \langle \psi | X_\tau (\delta B) \psi \rangle d^4x . \quad (6.31)\]
Now we may take the limit $\eta \to 1$. In this limit, the integral \([6.29]\) goes to zero, as will be justified in Lemma 6.2 below. Rearranging the terms using the relation $\pi_\tau \hat{\pi} = \ tau \hat{\pi}$ gives the result.

We now explain why the integral \([6.29]\) tends to zero if $\eta \to 1$. Since this is a rather subtle point, we give the details. However, for technical simplicity we assume that the bosonic potential has compact support. The result could be extended in a straightforward manner to the case that the potential has suitable decay properties at infinity by estimating the Lippmann-Schwinger equation (we refer the interested reader to the exposition in [14] and to similar methods in [15]).

\textbf{Lemma 6.2.} Assume that the fermion masses are different in the generations, i.e.

$$m_\alpha \neq m_\beta \quad \text{and} \quad \hat{m}_\alpha \neq \hat{m}_\beta \quad \text{for all} \quad \alpha, \beta \in \{1, 2, 3\} \quad \text{and} \quad \alpha \neq \beta.$$ 

Moreover, assume that the potential $B$ and its variation $\delta B$ are smooth and have compact support, and that $\psi$ is smooth. Then for any test function $\eta \in C^\infty_0(\mathbb{R}^4)$ which is constant in a neighborhood of the origin,

$$\lim_{L \to \infty} \int_M \langle \psi \mid Z \gamma^j (\delta B) \psi \rangle \frac{\partial}{\partial x^j} \eta \left( \frac{x}{L} \right) \, d^4 x = 0.$$ 

\textit{Proof.} By choosing $L$ sufficiently large, we can arrange that $\eta$ is constant on the support of $B$ and $\delta B$. Then we may replace $\psi$ and $\phi := \tilde{s}(\delta B) \psi$ by smooth solutions of the vacuum Dirac equation $(i\partial - m Y) \psi = 0 = (i\partial - m Y) \phi$. Since the matrix $1 - 3\pi_\tau$ vanishes on the diagonal and only mixes the wave functions within each sector, the integral \([6.32]\) can be rewritten as a finite sum of integrals of the form

$$\int_M \langle \psi_\alpha \mid \gamma^j \phi_\beta \rangle \partial_j \eta_L(x) \, d^4 x,$$

where $\eta_L(x) := \eta(x/L)$, and where $\psi_\alpha$ and $\phi_\beta$ are solutions of the Dirac equation for different masses,

$$(i\partial - m_\alpha) \psi_\alpha = 0 = (i\partial - m_\beta) \phi_\beta \quad \text{and} \quad m_\alpha \neq m_\beta.$$ 

Writing the solutions as distributions in momentum space,

$$\hat{\psi}_\alpha(k) = f(k) \delta(k^2 - m_\alpha^2), \quad \hat{\phi}_\beta(k) = g(k) \delta(k^2 - m_\beta^2),$$

the smoothness of $\psi_\alpha$ and $\phi_\beta$ imply that the functions $f$ and $g$ can be chosen to have rapid decay. Then the integral in \([6.33]\) can be rewritten in momentum space as

$$-i \int_M \langle \hat{\psi}_\alpha \mid \hat{k} (\hat{\eta}_L * \hat{\phi}_\beta) \rangle \frac{d^4 k}{(2\pi)^4},$$

where the star denotes the convolution of the distribution $\hat{\phi}_\beta$ with the test function $\hat{\eta}_L$ giving a Schwartz function (note that the smoothness of $\eta_L$ implies that $\eta_L$ has rapid decay), and the integral is to be understood that the distribution $\hat{\psi}_\alpha$ is applied to this Schwartz function. Since the functions $f$ and $g$ have rapid decay, for any $\varepsilon > 0$ there is a compact set $K \subset M$ such that

$$\left| \int_{M \setminus K} \langle \hat{\psi}_\alpha \mid \hat{k} (\hat{\eta}_L * \hat{\phi}_\beta) \rangle \, d^4 k \right| < \varepsilon.$$ 

For any fixed $K$, the supports of the distributions $\delta(k^2 - m_\alpha^2)$ and $\delta(k^2 - m_\beta^2)$ have a finite separation (measured in the Euclidean norm on $\mathbb{R}^4$ in a chosen reference frame). Since $\eta_L(k) = L^4 \eta(Lk)$, by increasing $L$ we can arrange that the function $\eta_L$ decays
on a smaller and smaller scale. Since $\hat{\eta}$ has rapid decay, this implies that the integral over $K$ tends to zero,

$$\lim_{L \rightarrow \infty} \int_K <\hat{\psi}_\alpha | \hat{\psi}_L \ast \hat{\phi}_\beta> d^4k = 0 .$$

Since $\varepsilon$ is arbitrary, the result follows. \(\Box\)

Combining the result of Proposition 6.1 with the variation of the Yang-Mills Lagrangian in (6.12) (which can be computed in the standard way, see Section 7), one obtains effective field equations describing the dynamics of the chiral gauge field and its coupling to the Dirac particles and anti-particles. Together with the Dirac equation (6.2), one obtains a consistent set of equations which we regard as the effective EL-equations in the continuum limit.

Let us discuss the structure of the effective field equations: The first term (6.21) differs from the standard contribution obtained by varying the bosonic potential in the Dirac Lagrangian (6.20) by the fact that the sectorial projection has disappeared. This is desirable because the resulting contribution looks very much like the variation of the standard Lagrangian (6.18). The only difference is the additional factor $X_\tau$. However, this factor comes into play only if one considers gauge fields which couple to the right-handed neutrinos. Such gauge fields will be ruled out in the present paper. They also do not appear in the standard model. Therefore, the factor $X_\tau$ in (6.21) seems consistent with observations.

The terms (6.22)–(6.24) are additional contributions which are absent in the standard Lagrangian formulation. They can be understood as corrections which are needed in order to get consistency with the Dirac equation (6.2). We refer to the terms (6.22)–(6.24) as the sectorial corrections to the field equations. The term (6.22) modifies the coupling of those chiral gauge potentials which involve a non-trivial mixing matrix. The correction (6.23) can be understood similarly. As a difference, it involves the Green’s function $\tilde{s}$ and is therefore nonlocal (we note that the choice of the Green’s function $\tilde{s}$ in (6.16) is uniquely determined by the causal perturbation expansion [16]). The correction term (6.24) is also nonlocal and comes into play when the neutrinos are massive. The appearance of these nonlocal correction terms are a prediction of the fermionic projector approach. It is conceivable that these corrections are testable in experiments. More specifically, the corrections vanish if the mixing matrices do not come into play and if the Dirac wave functions are eigenstates of the mass matrix. Thinking of the analogous situation for the standard model, the corrections vanish for example for electrons with an electromagnetic interaction. However, they come play in an interaction via $W$-bosons if the wave function $\psi$ is a non-trivial superposition of for example an electron and a muon. The detailed mechanism triggered by the nonlocal effects is unclear and still needs to investigated. All we can say for the moment is that the corrections (6.23) and (6.24) cease to play any role as soon as the Dirac Lagrangian no longer involves cross terms of electrons and muons.

We finally point out that the effective action cannot be regarded as some kind of “continuum limit” of the causal action principle. It is merely a method for recovering the EL equations corresponding to the causal action principle in the continuum limit from an effective variational principle. The basic difference of the causal action principle and the effective action can be understood already from the fact that the causal action is minimized, whereas for the effective action one only seeks for critical points.
Thus the effective action should be regarded merely as a convenient method for getting the connection to the standard Lagrangian formalism. In particular, by applying Noether’s theorem to the effective action, one can immediately deduce conservation laws for the effective EL equations.

7. The Field Equations for Chiral Gauge Fields

We now use the methods of Section 6 to compute the effective action for the coupling of the Dirac field to the gauge fields. In order to determine the dynamical gauge algebra \( g \subset \mathfrak{g}_6 \) (defined before (6.7)), we first recall that in (3.28) we derived the admissible gauge group together with the representation of the gauge potentials (3.29). In Section 5, we obtained further restrictions for the gauge potentials. Namely, the analysis of the bilinear logarithmic terms in (5.1) revealed that the diagonal elements must satisfy the constraint (5.1). The field tensor terms in (5.2) on the other hand, gave us the two linear constraints (5.39) for the field tensor, which due to gauge symmetry we can also regard as constraints for the potentials. Putting these conditions together, we conclude that the dynamical gauge potentials must be of one of the two alternative forms

\[
\mathcal{B} = \chi_R \begin{pmatrix} A_{11}^L & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} + \chi_L \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -A_{11}^L \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{or} \quad (7.1)
\]

\[
\mathcal{B} = \chi_R \begin{pmatrix} A_{11}^L & A_{12}^L U_{\text{MNS}}^* \\ A_{21}^L U_{\text{MNS}} & -A_{11}^L \end{pmatrix} + \chi_L \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \quad . \quad (7.2)
\]

The potentials of the form (7.1) do not form a Lie algebra (because taking a commutator, the resulting potential has the same sign on the two isospin components, in contradiction to (7.1)). This means that the structure of (7.1) is not preserved under local gauge transformations corresponding to the potentials of the form (7.1). As this seems to be inconsistent, we disregard this case. We thus restrict attention to the remaining case (7.2) where \( g \) is the Lie algebra su(2), which acts on the left-handed component of the spinors and involves the MNS mixing matrix.

Using the results of Section 4 it is straightforward to compute the right side of (6.11). Namely, applying Lemma 4.4 together with (4.22) and (6.10) (and using that \( \delta A_c \) is traceless), for the right side of (6.11) we obtain the contribution

\[
\text{Tr}_{C^2} \left( Q_R^{k} \partial_\epsilon \mathcal{A} \right) (\delta A_L)_k \asymp K_1 \text{Tr}_{C^2} \left( J^k_L \left( \delta \hat{A}_L \right)_k \right) .
\]

This is compatible with the variation of the Dirac Lagrangian (6.20) (for fixed wave functions) if we choose

\[
K(\epsilon, \xi) = 3 K_1 .
\]

It is worth pointing out that this compatibility involves both the fact that the left-handed gauge potentials couple only to the left-handed component of the Dirac current and also that only the sectorial projection of the potentials and currents appears. In particular, our method would fail if (4.22) involved the left-handed component of the Dirac current.

The contributions by the bosonic current and mass terms as listed in (4.22)—(4.29) are a bit more difficult to handle because the logarithmic poles must be removed with the help of the microlocal chiral transformation (see Proposition 4.7). If this is done, the resulting contributions have a rather complicated form. However, the general
structure is easy to understand: First, writing the $\text{SU}(2)_L$-gauge potentials in components

$$A^\alpha_L = \frac{1}{2} \text{Tr}(\sigma^\alpha A_L^L),$$

(7.3)

it is obvious from the symmetries that all contributions involving $A^\alpha_L \cdot \delta A^\beta_L$ and $j^\alpha_L \cdot \delta A^\beta_L$ with $\alpha \neq \beta$ vanish. Second, in view of the symmetry under relative phase transformations of the isospin components

$$\Psi \rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} e^{i\varphi} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-i\varphi} \end{pmatrix} \Psi,$$

the contributions involving $A^\alpha_L \cdot \delta A^\alpha_L$ and $j^\alpha_L \cdot \delta A^\alpha_L$ coincide for $\alpha = 1$ and $\alpha = 2$. Hence the equation (6.11) can be satisfied for a bosonic Lagrangian of the form

$$L_{YM} = a_1 \left( (\partial j L_1)(\partial j^1 L_1) + (\partial j^2 L_1)(\partial j^2 L_1) \right) + a_3 (\partial j^3 L_1)(\partial j^3 L_1)$$

$$+ b_1 (A^1_L)^2 + (A^2_L)^2) + b_3 (A^3_L)^2$$

and suitable constants $a_1, a_2$ and $b_1, b_3$. We thus obtain the following result.

**Theorem 7.1.** Expressing the $\text{SU}(2)_L$-gauge potentials in Pauli matrices acting on the isospin (7.3) (and similarly for the currents), the field equations read

$$j^\alpha_L - M^2_{\alpha} A^\alpha_L = c^\alpha_{\alpha} J^\alpha_L + (f^{[0]} * j^\alpha_L)^\alpha + (f^{[2]} * A^\alpha_L)^\alpha,$$

where $j^\alpha_L$ and $J^\alpha_R$ are the currents (4.20) and (4.21), respectively. The mass parameters $M^\alpha_{\alpha}$ and the coupling constants $c^\alpha_{\alpha}$ satisfy the relations

$$M_1 = M_2 \quad \text{and} \quad c_1 = c_2.$$

Finally, the distributions $f^{[0]}$ and $f^{[2]}$ are convolution kernels.

The convolution kernels take into account the following corrections:

- The corrections due to the smooth, noncausal contributions to the fermionic projector. These corrections include the vacuum polarization due to the fermion loops. These corrections are discussed further in [8, §8.1–§8.3].
- The corrections due to the microlocal chiral transformation (see §4.4).
- The sectorial corrections (see Proposition 6.1 and the explanation after the proof of Lemma 6.2).

Qualitatively speaking, this theorem can be understood similar to the results in [8]. Also, the calculations use exactly the same methods. The appearance of bosonic masses and the connection to a spontaneous breaking of the gauge symmetry is explained in [8, §8.5]. In particular, the convolution kernels $f^{[0]}$ and $f^{[2]}$ are computed and interpreted just as in [8, §8.1 and §8.2]. In view of these similarities, we here omit the detailed computations and only point to two steps in the computations which are not quite straightforward. First, as mentioned after Proposition 4.6, the constants $c_0$ and $c_2$ are not determined by this proposition. Following the strategy used in [8, §7.9], we can fix these constants by minimizing $c_0$. Thus we choose the microlocal chiral transformation in such a way that the vectorial contribution (4.48) to the fermionic projector is as small as possible. Using this method, for a given regularization one can also compute the coupling constants and the masses similar as in [8, §8.6].

The second step which requires an explanation concerns the computation of the coupling constants and bosonic masses for a given regularization in the spirit of [8, §8.6].
Here one must distinguish the two cases (i) and (ii) in (3.36). Which of these cases applies depends crucially on the choice of the parameter \( p_{\text{reg}} \) in (3.34). In particular, by choosing \( p_{\text{reg}} \) sufficiently small (and thus the parameter \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \) in (2.42) sufficiently large), we can arrange that we are in case (ii). In order to keep the setting as general as possible, we deliberately left open which of the cases should be physically relevant. We found that all our computations up to and including Section 4 apply in the same way in both cases. In the analysis of the bilinear logarithmic terms in §5.1 however, our constructions apply in case (i) only under the additional assumption (5.2). The analysis of the field tensor terms in §5.2 was carried out only in case (ii) (and at present it is unclear how the results could be extended to case (i)). This gives a strong indication that the physically relevant scaling should indeed be described by case (ii).

This scaling can be realized by choosing the parameter \( p_{\text{reg}} \) in (3.34) sufficiently small. Thus in a physical model, the parameter \( \tau_{\text{reg}} \) in (2.42) should be chosen sufficiently large.

Arranging in this way that we are in case (ii), it remains to justify the transition from the EL equations (1.7) to the stronger conditions (4.12). We already indicated an argument before Corollary 4.2. We are now in the position to make this argument precise: Recall that in case (ii), the spectral projectors \( I_n \) are isospin-diagonal (3.44). The perturbation of these spectral projectors by the gauge phases leads to a finite hierarchy of equations to be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone. With this in mind, it suffices to satisfy (4.7) with \( I_n \) according to (3.44). But clearly, we must take into account that the gauge phases enter the matrices \( \mathcal{K}_{nc} \), as we now explain. We begin with the Dirac current terms. As the left-handed component of a wave function is modified by the gauge phases in the obvious way by

\[
\chi_L \Psi(y) \to \chi_L \exp \left( -i \int_x^y A_L^j \xi_j \right) \Psi(y),
\]

the gauge potential enters the Dirac current term as described by the replacement

\[
J_L \to \left( 1 - iA_L^j \left( \frac{x+y}{2} \right) \xi_j \right) J_L.
\]

In this way, the off-diagonal components of the Dirac current enter the diagonal matrix entries of \( \mathcal{K}_n \) and thus the EL equations (1.7). Since the gauge currents have the same behavior under gauge transformations (see (5.3)), their off-diagonal elements enter the EL equations in the same way. For the mass terms, there is the complication that they have a different behavior under gauge transformations (for the logarithmic terms, this was studied in (5.17), whereas for the contributions of the second order perturbation calculation, the dependence on the gauge phases can be read off from the formulas given in [5, Def. 7.2.1]). This different behavior under gauge transformation does not cause problems for the logarithmic poles, because we saw in (5.1) that the logarithmic poles on the light cone can be arranged to vanish. Thus the only effect of the different gauge behavior of the mass terms is that it modifies the values of the bosonic mass corresponding to the off-diagonal gauge potentials. The easiest method to describe this effect quantitatively is to again work with the EL equations (1.12), but to modify the off-diagonal matrix elements of \( \mathcal{K}_L \) and \( \mathcal{K}_R \) by multiplying the contributions (4.23)–(4.29) with numerical factors which take into account the linear behavior under off-diagonal left-handed gauge transformations. It is planned to work out the masses and coupling constants for a specific example of an admissible regularization in a separate publication.
One might ask whether all coupling constants and masses in Theorem 7.1 should be the same, i.e. if also
\[ M_1 = M_3 \quad \text{and} \quad c_1 = c_3. \]
Indeed, the contribution by the bosonic current to \( Q_L \) in (4.22) suggests that the derivative terms in the bosonic Lagrangian can be written as
\[ \text{Tr}_{C_2} \left( (\partial_j \hat{A}_L)(\partial^j \hat{A}_L) \right). \] (7.4)
However, since the microlocal chiral transformation involves the masses of the Dirac particles, which may be different in the two isospin components, there is no reason why the more elegant form (7.4) should be preserved when the microlocal chiral transformation is taken into account. For the mass terms, on the other hand, it is obvious from (4.23)–(4.29) that the masses of the Dirac particles are involved. Thus again, there is no reason why there should be a simple relation between the masses \( M_1 \) and \( M_3 \).

8. The Einstein Equations

Our first task is to compute the symmetric tensor \( Q^{kl} \) as defined by (6.14). If we used the form of \( \Delta Q \) in Corollary 4.2, we would get zero, because
\[
\sum_{n,c} \text{Tr}_{C_2} (I_n Q_c) \text{Tr}_{C_2} I_n = \sum_{n,c} \text{Tr}_{C_2} (I_n Q_c) = \sum_c \text{Tr}_{C_2} (Q_c) = 0,
\]
where in the last step we used (4.14). This means that in order to compute (6.13), we need to evaluate (4.4) to higher order in \((m\varepsilon)^p_{\text{reg}}\) (note that these contributions were neglected in §4.1 according to (4.2)).

Expanding (4.4) to higher order in powers of \((m\varepsilon)^p_{\text{reg}}\) is a bit subtle because there might be contributions to \( \Delta|\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}| \) which are linear in \((m\varepsilon)^p_{\text{reg}}\) but do not involve curvature. In this case, we would have to take into account the effect of curvature on the factors
\[
\frac{\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}}{|\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}|} F_{xy}^{ncs} P(x,y) \] (8.1)
in (4.4). The resulting contributions to \( Q(x,y) \) would not be proportional to \( \xi \), giving rise to additional equations to be satisfied in the continuum limit. Moreover, we would have to take into account the effect of the Dirac and bosonic currents to (8.1), giving rise to even more additional equations to be satisfied in the continuum limit. For this reason, we must assume that our regularization is such that in the vacuum, the quantities \(|\lambda_{ncs}^{xy}|\) coincide pointwise up to the order \((m\varepsilon)^{2p_{\text{reg}}}\). Such a regularization condition was already imposed in (5.38). Now we need to complement it by a similar condition for the upper index minus one,
\[
|F_{[0]}^{(-1)}| = |T_{[0]}^{(-1)}| \left( 1 + \mathcal{O}\left((m\varepsilon)^{2p_{\text{reg}}}\right) \right) \quad \text{pointwise}. \] (8.2)
We note that this is compatible with (5.35) and poses an additional condition on the regularization in the case \( n = -1 \) and \( p = 0 \). Similar as explained after (5.38), the pointwise condition (8.2) could be replaced by a number of conditions to be satisfied in a weak evaluation on the light cone, but we do not enter this analysis here. Generally speaking, the conditions (5.38) and (8.2) seem to indicate that the right-handed neutrino states should only affect the phases of the factors \( T_{[0]}^{(-1)} \) and \( T_{[0]}^{(0)} \), up to errors of the order \( \mathcal{O}\left((m\varepsilon)^{2p_{\text{reg}}}\right)\).
Lemma 8.1. Assume that the regularization satisfies the conditions (8.2) and (5.38). Then the energy-momentum tensor gives the following contribution to \( Q^{kl} \),
\[
Q^{kl} \asymp \frac{1}{2} K_8 \left\{ \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 - 3 \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 + 1 \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 + 1 \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 \right\} \\
+ \frac{L^{(0)}_0}{T^{(0)}_0} \left( - \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 + 3 \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 - \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 - \left( \frac{\hat{T}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 \right) \\
+ \mathcal{O} \left( \left( \frac{m \varepsilon}{\ell_{\text{macro}}} \right)^2 \right) \left( \text{deg} = 4 \right) + \left( \text{deg} < 4 \right).
\]

Proof. The matrices \( K_L \) and \( K_R \) were computed in Lemma 4.11. Substituting these formulas into the representation of Corollary 4.2 and computing the trace in (6.13) gives zero. More generally, one sees from (4.4) that the trace in (6.13) vanishes no matter what the perturbations of the eigenvalues \( \Delta \lambda^{xy}_{\text{ncs}} \) are, provided that we approximate the last term in (4.4) by its leading asymptotics on the light cone
\[
\left| \frac{\lambda^{xy}_{\text{ncs}}}{\lambda^{xy}_{\text{ncs}}} \right| F^{xy}_{\text{ncs}} P(x,y) = \delta_n - \frac{i}{2} T^{(n)}_{[0]} g^{(-1)} (\hat{T}^{(n)}_{[0]}) \chi_c \xi + \left( \text{deg} < 4 \right) 
\]
where for clarity we wrote out the error terms in (4.2). Therefore, it suffices to compute the correction to (8.3) to next order in \( (m \varepsilon)^2 \). To this end, we must carefully distinguish between factors \( T^{(n)}_{[p]} \) and \( \tilde{L}^{(n)}_{[p]} \), similar as done in (3.13)–(3.15). A straightforward calculation using (8.2) and (5.38) gives the result.

\[ \square \]

Lemma 8.2. Curvature gives the following contribution to \( Q^{kl} \),
\[
Q^{kl} \asymp \frac{\tau_{\text{reg}}}{\delta^2} R^{kl} K_{16} \left( -1 + \frac{L^{(0)}}{T^{(0)}_0} \right) \\
+ \mathcal{O} \left( \left( \frac{m \varepsilon}{\ell_{\text{macro}}} \right)^2 \right) \left( \text{deg} = 4 \right) + o \left( \left| \xi^c \right|^{-4} \right) + \left( \text{deg} < 4 \right).
\]

Proof. The matrices \( K_L \) and \( K_R \) were computed in Lemma 4.12. Again, substituting these formulas into the representation of Corollary 4.2 and computing the trace in (6.13) gives zero. Therefore, just as in the proof of Lemma 8.1, we need to take into account the correction to (8.3) to next order in \( (m \varepsilon)^2 \). Denoting the contributions to \( K_{L,R}^{kl} \) in Lemma 4.12 leaving out the factors \( \xi^c \xi^l \) by \( \mathcal{K}^{kl}_{L,R} \), we thus obtain (cf. (4.13), (4.14) and (6.14))
\[
Q^{kl} \asymp \frac{1}{2} \left\{ \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 - 3 \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 + \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 + \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 \right\} \\
+ \frac{L^{(0)}}{T^{(0)}_0} \left( - \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 + 3 \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_1 - \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_L}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 - \left( \frac{\mathcal{K}^{kl}_R}{T^{(0)}_0} \right)_2 \right) \\
+ \mathcal{O} \left( \left( \frac{m \varepsilon}{\ell_{\text{macro}}} \right)^2 \right) \left( \text{deg} = 4 \right) + \left( \text{deg} < 4 \right).
\]

The term (4.91) drops out everywhere. Computing the contribution by (4.92) gives the result. \[ \square \]
The next step is to satisfy (6.15). In fact, the result of the previous lemmas are compatible with (6.15) if we choose the parameter \( \tau \) in the Dirac Lagrangian (6.20) as
\[
\tau = -4
\]
and the Lagrangian \( L_{EH} \) according to (6.16) with
\[
\kappa = \frac{\delta^2}{\tau_{\text{reg}}} \frac{K_{17}}{K_{18}}, \tag{8.4}
\]
where \( K_{17} \) and \( K_{18} \) are the composite expressions
\[
K_{17} = -K_{16} \left( 1 - \frac{L^{(0)}[0]}{T^{(0)}[0]} \right) \quad \text{and} \quad K_{18} = \frac{1}{2} K_8 \left( 1 - \frac{L^{(0)}[0]}{T^{(0)}[0]} \right)
\]
(which are both to be evaluated weakly on the light cone (2.31)). These findings are summarized as follows.

**Theorem 8.3.** Assume that the parameters \( \delta \) and \( p_{\text{reg}} \) satisfy the scaling (4.90), and that the regularization satisfies the conditions (5.38) and (8.2). Then the EL equations in the continuum limit (3.2) can be expressed in terms of the effective action (6.17). The parameter \( \tau \) in the Dirac Lagrangian (6.20) is determined to have the value \( \tau = -4 \).

The gravitational constant \( \kappa \) is given by (8.4).

Combined with the equations for the chiral gauge fields in Theorem 7.1 this theorem shows that the structure of the interaction is described completely by the underlying EL equations (3.3) corresponding to the causal action principle (1.2).

We point out that our results imply that the right-handed component of the neutrinos must couple to the Einstein equations with a relative factor of \(-3\). In particular, the right-handed component of the neutrinos has a negative energy density, thus violating the usual energy conditions. This might give a possible explanation for the anomalous acceleration of the universe.

One should keep in mind that the effective Lagrangian is determined only up to terms which contribute to the EL equations (3.2) to degree three or lower. In particular, if the Ricci tensor is a multiple of the metric, the term \( R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k \) in Lemma 4.12 is of degree one on the light cone, giving rise to a contribution which can be absorbed in the error term. In other words, to the considered degree four on the light cone, the Ricci tensor is determined only up to multiples of the metric. This gives precisely the freedom to add the cosmological Lagrangian
\[
\int_M \frac{2\Lambda}{\kappa} \sqrt{-g} \, d^4x
\]
for an arbitrary value of the cosmological constant \( \Lambda \). In principle, the cosmological constant could be determined in our approach by evaluating the EL equations to degree three on the light cone. But this analysis goes beyond the scope of the present work.

We point out that our results exclude corrections to the Einstein-Hilbert action of higher order in the curvature tensor. Note that the simple fractions \( K_{17} \) and \( K_{18} \) are both of degree four, and thus their quotient is of the order one. Hence
\[
\kappa \sim \delta^2.
\]
This means that the Planck length is to be identified with the length scale \( \delta \) describing the shear and general surface states (see (2.33) and (2.38)).
We next explain how this theorem could be extended to the case
\[ \delta \simeq \frac{1}{m} \left( m \varepsilon \right)^{\text{reg}}. \]

In this case, the terms \( \sim m^2 R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k \) in Lemma 4.12 are of the same order as those \( \sim \tau_{\text{reg}} / \delta R_{jk} \xi^j \xi^k \) and must be taken into account. They can be obtained by a straightforward computation. The statement of Theorem 8.3 will remain the same, except that the form of \( K_{16} \) will of course be modified. The only structural difference is that (4.93) will then involve factors \( T^{(1)}_{0} \), which have logarithmic poles on the light cone. It does not seem possible to compensate these logarithmic poles by a microlocal transformation. Therefore, in order for the logarithmic poles to drop out of the EL equations, one must impose that
\[ \sum_{\alpha=1}^{3} m_{\alpha}^2 = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{3} \tilde{m}_{\alpha}^2 . \]

This constraint for the neutrino masses can be understood similar as in Remark 4.9.

Working out the detailed computations seems an interesting project for the future.

We finally note that for completeness, one should also compute how the energy-momentum tensor of the gauge fields enters the fermionic projector and verify that its effect on the EL equations to degree four is compatible with its coupling to the Einstein equations as given by the effective action. Since these computations are rather lengthy, we postpone them to a future publication. These computations would complete analysis of the EL equations to degree four on the light cone up to errors of the order
\[ Q(x, y) = (\text{deg} = 4) \cdot o(|\xi|^{-2}) + (\text{deg} < 4) . \]

**Appendix A. The Regularized Causal Perturbation Theory with Neutrinos**

**A.1. The General Setting.** For clarity, we begin with a single Dirac sea (i.e. with one direct summand of (2.41) or (2.54)). Thus without regularization, the vacuum is described as the product of the Fourier integral (1.6) with a chiral asymmetry matrix,
\[ P = X t \quad \text{with} \quad t = P_m \quad \text{and} \quad X = 1, \chi_L \text{ or } \chi_R , \quad \text{(A.1)} \]

under the constraint that \( X = 1 \) if \( m > 0 \). We again denote the regularization by an index \( \varepsilon \). We always assume that the regularization is homogeneous, so that \( P^{\varepsilon} \) is a multiplication operator in momentum space, which sometimes we denote for clarity by \( \hat{P}^{\varepsilon} \). If \( m > 0 \), we assume that the regularization satisfies all the conditions in [5, Chapter 4]; see also the compilation in [8, Section 3]. In the case \( m = 0 \), we relax the conditions on the shear and allow for general surface states, as explained in [2,3]. In the low-energy regime, \( P^{\varepsilon} \) should still be of the form (A.1), i.e.
\[ \hat{P}^{\varepsilon}(k) = \begin{cases} (\bar{k} + m) \delta(k^2 - m^2) & \text{if } m > 0 \\ \bar{X} \bar{k} \delta(k^2) & \text{if } m = 0 \end{cases} \quad (|k^0| + |\bar{k}| \lesssim \varepsilon^{-1}) . \quad \text{(A.2)} \]

However, in the high-energy regime, \( P^{\varepsilon} \) will no longer satisfy the Dirac equation. But in preparation of the perturbation expansion, we need to associate the states \( P^{\varepsilon} \) to eigenstates of the Dirac operator (not necessarily to the eigenvalue \( m \)). To this end, we introduce two operators \( V_{\text{shift}} \) and \( V_{\text{shear}} \) with the following properties. The
operator $V_{\text{shift}}$ has the purpose of changing the momentum of states such that general surface states (as in Figure I (B)) are mapped onto the mass cone, i.e.

$$V_{\text{shift}}(k) := \psi\left(v_{\text{shift}}(k)\right),$$

(A.3)

where $v_{\text{shift}} : \hat{M} \to \hat{M}$ is a diffeomorphism. The operator $V_{\text{shear}}$, on the other hand, is a unitary multiplication operator in momentum space, which has the purpose of introducing the shear of the surface states (i.e. it should map the states in Figure I (B) to those in Figure I (C)),

$$V_{\text{shear}}(k) = \hat{V}_{\text{shear}}(k) \psi(k) \quad \text{with} \quad \hat{V}_{\text{shear}}(k) \text{unitary}.$$  

These operators are to be chosen such that the operator $\hat{P}^\varepsilon$ defined by

$$P^\varepsilon = V_{\text{shear}} V_{\text{shift}} \hat{P}^\varepsilon V_{\text{shift}}^{-1} V_{\text{shear}}$$

(A.4)

is of the following form,

$$\hat{P}^\varepsilon(k) = \begin{cases} d(k) (\gamma + m(k) 1) \delta(k^2 - m(k)^2) & \text{if } m > 0 \\ d(k) X \gamma \delta(k^2) & \text{if } m = 0 \end{cases}$$

(A.5)

with $X$ as in (A.1). Thus in the massive case, $\hat{P}^\varepsilon$ should be composed of Dirac eigenstates corresponding to an energy-dependent mass $m(k) > 0$, and it should have vector-scalar structure. In the massless case, we demand that $k^2 = 0$, so that the states of $P^\varepsilon$ are all neutral. The ansatz (A.5) is partly a matter of convenience, and partly a requirement needed for the perturbation expansion (see Proposition A.1 below). Moreover, we assume for convenience that $\hat{P}^\varepsilon$ is only composed of states of negative energy,

$$\hat{P}^\varepsilon(k) = 0 \quad \text{if } k^2 < 0 \text{ or } k^0 > 0.$$  

(A.6)

In view of (A.2), it is easiest to assume that $V_{\text{shift}}$ and $V_{\text{shear}}$ are the identity in the low-energy regime, i.e.

$$\hat{V}_{\text{shear}}(k) = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad v_{\text{shift}}(k) = k \quad \text{if } |k^0| + |\vec{k}| \ll \varepsilon^{-1}.$$  

(A.7)

Then, by comparing (A.2) with (A.5), one finds that

$$d(k) = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad m(k) = m \quad \text{if } |k^0| + |\vec{k}| \ll \varepsilon^{-1}.$$  

(A.8)

The required regularization of $P^\varepsilon(x, y)$ on the scale $\varepsilon$ is implemented by demanding that

$$d(k) \text{ decays on the scale } |k^0| + |\vec{k}| \sim \varepsilon^{-1}.$$  

(A.9)

In view of their behavior in the low-energy regime, it is natural to assume that the functions in (A.7) and (A.8) should be smooth in momentum space and that their derivatives scale in powers of the regularization length, i.e.

$$|\nabla_k d(k)| \sim \varepsilon^{|\gamma|} |d(k)|, \quad |\nabla_k m(k)| \sim \varepsilon^{|\gamma|} |m(k)|$$

$$|\nabla_k \hat{V}_{\text{shear}}(k)| \sim \varepsilon^{|\gamma|} |\hat{V}_{\text{shear}}(k)|, \quad |\nabla_k v_{\text{shift}}(k)| \sim \varepsilon^{|\gamma|} |v_{\text{shift}}(k)|.$$  

(A.10)

Clearly, the above conditions do not uniquely determine the function $d$ and the operators $V_{\text{shift}}$ and $V_{\text{shear}}$. But we shall see that the results of our analysis will be independent of the choice of these operators. We remark that the transformation $V_{\text{shear}}$ is analogous to the transformations $U_l$ considered in [5, Appendix D] (see [5, eq. (D.22)]), except that here we consider only one unitary transformation.
The last construction immediately generalizes to a system of Dirac seas. Namely, suppose that without regularization, the auxiliary fermionic projector of the vacuum is a direct sum of Dirac seas (see for example (2.41) or (2.54)),

$$P_{\text{aux}}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} \bigoplus_{\ell = 1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} X_{\ell} t_{\ell}.$$  

Then we introduce $P^{\varepsilon}$ simply by taking the direct sum of the corresponding regularized seas

$$P_{\text{aux}} := \bigoplus_{\ell = 1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} P_{\varepsilon}^{\ell} , \quad V_{\text{shift}} := \bigoplus_{\ell = 1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} V_{\text{shift}}^{\ell} , \quad V_{\text{shear}} := \bigoplus_{\ell = 1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} V_{\text{shear}}^{\ell} .$$

Setting

$$P_{\text{aux}} = V_{\text{shear}} V_{\text{shift}} \hat{P}^{\varepsilon} V_{\text{shift}}^{-1} V_{\text{shear}}^{-1} ,$$

the operator $\hat{P}^{\varepsilon}$ satisfies the Dirac equation

$$(\slashed{k} - m Y(k)) \hat{P}^{\varepsilon}(k) = 0 , \quad \text{(A.11)}$$

where the mass matrix is given by (cf. (2.43) or (2.56))

$$m Y(k) = \bigoplus_{\ell = 1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} m_{\ell} .$$

In the low-energy regime, we know furthermore that

$$V_{\text{shear}}(k) = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad V_{\text{shift}}(k) = k$$

$$\hat{P}_{\text{aux}}(k) = X t$$

if $|k^0| + |\vec{k}| \ll \varepsilon^{-1} ,$

where $X$ and $t$ are given as in (2.34). Clearly, the regularity assumptions (A.10) are imposed similarly to $\hat{P}_{\text{aux}}$. Finally, we need to specify what we mean by saying that two Dirac seas are regularized in the same way. The difficulty is that, as mentioned above, different choices of $d$, $\hat{V}_{\text{shear}}$ and $\hat{V}_{\text{shift}}$ may give rise to the same regularization effects. In order to keep the situation reasonably simple, we use the convention that if we want two Dirac seas to show the same regularization effects, we choose the corresponding functions $d$ as well as $\hat{V}_{\text{shear}}$ and $\hat{V}_{\text{shift}}$ to be exactly the same. If conversely two Dirac seas should show different regularization effects, we already choose the corresponding functions $d$ to be different. Then we can say that two Dirac seas labeled by $a$ and $b$ are regularized in the same way if $d_a \equiv d_b$. In this case, our convention is that also $(V_{\text{shear}})_a = (V_{\text{shear}})_b$ and $(V_{\text{shift}})_a = (V_{\text{shift}})_b$. This notion gives rise to an equivalence relation on the Dirac seas. In the formalism of §2.6, the equivalence classes will be labeled by the parameters $\tau_{i}^{\text{reg}}$ (see (2.42) and (2.57)).

A.2. Formal Introduction of the Interaction. Now the interaction can be introduced most conveniently by using the unitary perturbation flow [11, Section 5]. In order not to get confused with the mass matrix, we introduce an additional spectral parameter $\mu$ into the free Dirac equation, which in momentum space reads

$$(\slashed{k} - m Y(k) - \mu 1) \hat{\Psi}(k) = 0 .$$

For this Dirac equation, we can introduce the spectral projectors $p$, the causal fundamental solutions $k$ and the symmetric Green’s functions $s$ can be introduced just as in [5, §2.2], if only in the formulas in momentum space we replace $m$ by $m Y(k)$. For
THE CONTINUUM LIMIT OF A FERMION SYSTEM INVOLVING NEUTRINOS

clarify, we denote the dependence on $\mu$ by an subscript $+\mu$ (this notation was used similarly in [5 §2.6]; see also [3 §C.3] for an additional "modified mass scaling", which we will for simplicity not consider here). We describe the interaction by inserting an operator $B$ into the Dirac operator,

$$D = i\partial + B - mY(k).$$

After adding the subscript $+\mu$ to all factors $p$, $k$ or $s$ in the operator products in [11 Section 5], we obtain an operator $U$ which associates to every solution $\psi$ of the free Dirac equation $(i\partial - mY - \mu 1)\psi = 0$ a corresponding solution $\tilde{\psi}$ of the interacting Dirac equation $(i\partial + B - mY - \mu 1)\psi = 0,$

$$U(B) : \psi \mapsto \tilde{\psi}.$$

The operator $U$ is uniquely defined in terms of a formal power series in $B$. Taking $\mu$ as a free parameter, in [11, Section 5] the operator $U$ is shown to be unitary with respect to the indefinite inner product (2.3). We now use $U$ to unitarily transform all the Dirac states contained in the operator $\hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon$ and set

$$\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{aux} = V_{shear} V_{shift} U(B) \hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon U(B)^{-1} V_{shift}^{-1} V_{shear}^{-1}. \quad (A.12)$$

This construction uniquely defines the regularized auxiliary fermionic projector with interaction $\hat{\mathcal{P}}_{aux}$ in terms of a formal power expansion in $B$. The fermionic projector is then obtained by forming the sectorial projection (see (2.52) or (2.55)).

A.3. Compatibility Conditions for the Interaction. In order to derive the structure of the admissible $B$, we first consider a perturbation calculation to first order and assume that $B$ is a multiplication operator in position space having the form of a plane wave of momentum $q$,

$$B(x) = B_q e^{-iqx}. \quad (A.13)$$

In this case (cf. [5 eq. (D.14)]),

$$\Delta \hat{\mathcal{P}}_{aux} = - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} d\mu \left( s_{+\mu} B p_{+\mu} \hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon + \hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon p_{+\mu} B s_{+\mu} \right).$$

Using a matrix notation in the direct sums with indices $a, b \in \{1, \ldots, \ell_{\text{max}}\}$, we obtain (for the notation see [5 Chapter 2] or [11])

$$(\Delta \hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon)^a_b (k + q, k) = - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} d\mu \left\{ s_{m_a + \mu}(k + q) (B_q)^a_b p_{m_b + \mu}(k) (\hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon)^b_a(k) + (\hat{\mathcal{P}}_\epsilon)^a_b(k + q) p_{m_a + \mu}(k + q) (B_q)^b_a s_{m_b + \mu}(k) \right\}. \quad (A.14)$$

This equation was already considered in [3 Section 3] and [5 Appendix D]. However, here we analyze the situation more systematically and in a more general context, pointing out the partial results which were obtained previously.

For clarity, we analyze (A.14) step by step, beginning with the diagonal elements. For ease in notation, we assume that $B_q$ has only one non-trivial component, which is on the diagonal,

$$(B_q)^a_a = \delta^{a\ell} \delta_{bl} B \quad (A.15)$$
with $\ell \in \{1, \ldots, \ell_{\text{max}}\}$ and $B$ a matrix acting on Dirac spinors. Shifting the integration variable according to $m_\ell + \mu \to \mu$, we obtain (cf. [5 eq. (D.15)])

$$(\Delta \hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k + q, k)$$

$$= - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} d\mu \left\{ s_\mu(k + q) B p_\mu(k) (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k) + (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k + q) p_\mu(k + q) B s_\mu(k) \right\}$$

$$= - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} d\mu \epsilon(\mu) \left\{ \frac{\text{PP}}{(k + q)^2 - \mu^2} (k + q + \mu) B (k + \mu) \delta(k^2 - \mu^2) (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k) + (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k + q) \delta((k + q)^2 - \mu^2) (k + q + \mu) B (k + \mu) \right\}$$

$$= - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} d\mu \epsilon(\mu) \frac{\text{PP}}{2kq + q^2} \left\{ (k + q + \mu) B (k + \mu) \delta(k^2 - \mu^2) (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k) - (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k + q) \delta((k + q)^2 - \mu^2) (k + q + \mu) B (k + \mu) \right\}.$$

where in the last step we used that the argument of the $\delta$-distribution vanishes. Carrying out the $\mu$-integration gives (cf. [5 eq. (D.15)])

$$(\Delta \hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k + q, k) = - \frac{\text{PP}}{4kq + 2q^2} \left\{ ((k + q) B + B k) (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k) - (\hat{P}^\varepsilon)_{\ell}(k + q) ((k + q) B + B k) \right\}. \quad (A.16)$$

Here the principal part has poles if $2kq + q^2 = 0$, leading to a potential divergence of $\Delta \hat{P}^\varepsilon$. In order to explain the nature of this divergence, we first point out that if $B$ had been chosen to be a smooth function with rapid decay, then $\Delta \hat{P}$ would have been finite (see the proof of [5 Lemma 2.2.2]). Thus the potential divergence is related to the fact that the plane wave in (A.13) does not decay at infinity. A more detailed picture is obtained by performing the light-cone expansion (see [3 and [5 Appendix F]). Then one can introduce the notion that (A.16) is causal if its light-cone expansion only involves integrals along a line segment $\overline{xy}$. Since such integrals are uniformly bounded, it follows immediately that all contributions to the light-cone expansion are finite for all $q$. If conversely (A.16) diverges, then the analysis in [5 Appendix F] reveals that individual contributions to the light-cone expansion do diverge, so that unbounded line integrals must appear (see also the explicit light-cone expansions in [2]). In this way, one gets a connection between the boundedness of (A.16) and the causality of the light-cone expansion.

Unbounded line integrals lead to contributions to the EL equations whose scaling behavior in the radius is different from all other contributions. Therefore, the EL equations are satisfied only if all unbounded line integrals drop out. The easiest way to arrange this is to demand that the fermionic projector itself should not involve any unbounded line integrals. This is our motivation for imposing that

$$(\Delta \hat{P})^\varepsilon(k + q, k) \text{ should be bounded locally uniformly in } q. \quad (A.17)$$

Let us analyze this boundedness condition for (A.16). Since the denominator in (A.16) vanishes as $q \to 0$, we clearly get the necessary condition that the curly brackets must vanish at $q = 0$,

$$\left\{ (k, B), \hat{P}^\varepsilon(k) \right\} = 0. \quad (A.18)$$
Using (A.5) together with the identity
\[ \{\{\gamma_\ell, B\}, \gamma_\ell\} = [k^2, B] + \gamma_\ell B k - k B k_\ell = 0, \]
we find that (A.18) is automatically satisfied in the case \( X = 1 \). The situation is more interesting if a chiral asymmetry is present. If for example \( X = \chi_L \), we get the condition
\[ \{\{\gamma_\ell, B\}, \chi_L k\} = 0. \]
This condition is again trivial if \( B \) is odd (meaning that \( \{B, \gamma^5\} = 0 \)). However, if \( B \) is even, we conclude that if \( X = \chi_L \), only odd potentials may occur. We can write this result more generally as
\[ \{\{\gamma_\ell, B\}, \gamma_\ell\} = \gamma^5 k B k_\ell \]
(where in the last step we used that \( k^2 = 0 \) in view of (A.5)). As \( k \) is any state on the lower mass shell, this rules out that \( B \) is a bilinear potential, leaving us with a scalar or a pseudoscalar potential. In order to rule out these potentials, we next choose a vector \( \hat{q} \) with \( \hat{q} k = 0 \), set \( q = \varepsilon \hat{q} \) and consider (A.16) in the limit \( \varepsilon \to 0 \). Then the denominator in (A.16) diverges like \( \varepsilon^{-2} \), so that the curly brackets must tend to zero even \( \sim \varepsilon^2 \).
\[ \left( (\gamma_\ell + \varepsilon \hat{q}) B + B k_\ell \right) \delta \varepsilon (k) - \delta \varepsilon (k + \varepsilon \hat{q}) \left( (\gamma_\ell + \varepsilon \hat{q}) B + B k_\ell \right) = O(\varepsilon^2). \] (A.19)
Using that \( \delta \varepsilon (k) \) is left-handed and that \( B \) is even, we find that the first summand in (A.19) is right-handed, whereas the second summand is left-handed. Hence both summand must vanish separately, and thus
\[ 0 = \left( (\gamma_\ell + \hat{q}) B + B k_\ell \right) \delta \varepsilon (k) = \hat{q} B k_\ell d(k) \delta(k^2). \]
This condition implies that \( B \) must vanish. We conclude that if \( X = \chi_L \), only odd potentials may occur. We can write this result more generally as
\[ B X = X^* B. \] (A.20)
We have thus derived the causality compatibility condition (2.48) from our boundedness condition (A.17). This derivation is an alternative to the method in [5, §2.3], where the same condition was introduced by the requirement that it should be possible to commute the chiral asymmetry matrix through the perturbation expansion.
So far, we considered (A.17) in the limit \( q \to 0 \). We now analyze this condition for general \( q \). Using (A.5) and (A.20), a short calculation gives
\[ (\Delta \delta \varepsilon^e_k) (k + q, k) = -X \frac{(\gamma_\ell + \hat{q}) B k_\ell}{4kq + 2q^2} \left( d(k) \delta(k^2 - m^2) - d(k + q) \delta((k + q)^2 - m^2) \right), \]
we we set \( m = m_\ell \). If \( d(k) = d(k + q) \), the transformations
\[ \int_0^1 \delta' \left( k^2 - m^2 + \tau(2kq + q^2) \right) d\tau = \frac{1}{2kq + q^2} \int_0^1 \frac{d}{d\tau} \delta \left( k^2 - m^2 + \tau(2kq + q^2) \right) d\tau \]
\[ = \frac{1}{2kq + q^2} \delta((k + q)^2 - m^2) - \delta(k^2 - m^2) \]
show that \( \Delta \delta \varepsilon \) is indeed a bounded distribution for any \( q \). Thus it remains to be concerned about the contribution if \( \delta(k) \neq \delta(k + q) \),
\[ X \frac{(\gamma_\ell + \hat{q}) B k_\ell}{4kq + 2q^2} \delta(k^2 - m^2) \left( d(k + q) - d(k) \right). \] (A.21)
Unless in the trivial case \( B = 0 \), this contribution is infinite at the poles of the denominator. We conclude that in order to comply with the condition (A.17), we must impose that the weight function \( d(k) \) in (A.5) is constant on the mass shell \( k^2 = m(k)^2 \). This is indeed the case in the low-energy regime (A.8). However, in the high-energy region, the function \( d(k) \) is in general not a constant (and indeed, assuming that \( d(k) \) is constant would be in contradiction to (A.9)). Our way out of this problem is to observe that (A.21) implies that the light-cone expansion of (A.16) is in general not causal, in the sense that it involves unbounded line integrals. However, using that \( d(k + q) - d(k) \sim q|\nabla d| \), the scalings \( q \sim \ell^{-1}_\text{macro} \) and (A.10) show that these non-causal contributions to the light-cone expansion are of higher order in \( \varepsilon/\ell\text{macro} \).

This consideration shows that the perturbation expansion will give rise to error terms of higher order in \( \varepsilon/\ell\text{macro} \). In what follows, we will always neglect such error terms. If this is done, the above assumptions are consistent and in agreement with (A.17), provided that the causality compatibility condition (A.20) holds.

Before moving on to potentials which mix different Dirac seas, we remark that the above arguments can also be used to derive constraints for the possible form of \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \), thus partly justifying our ansatz (A.5).

**Proposition A.1 (Possible form of \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon \)).** Suppose that \( \Delta \hat{P}_\varepsilon \) as given by (A.16) satisfies the condition (A.17). We renounce the assumptions on \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon \) (see (A.5), (A.6), (A.8) and (A.10)), but we assume instead that the admissible interaction includes chiral or axial potentials. Then for every \( k \), there are complex coefficients \( a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{C} \) such that

\[
\hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) = a \mathbf{1} + ib\gamma^5 + ck / + d\gamma^5 k / .
\]

This condition is obviously satisfied if \( B = \gamma^5 A \) is a vector potential. Writing the bilinear component of \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \) in the form \( F_{ij} \gamma^i \gamma^j \) with an anti-symmetric tensor field \( F \), we get the condition

\[
0 = \gamma^5 \{ [A, \gamma^5 k] , \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \} = 4\gamma^5 ( (kv) A - (Av) k ) + 4((kv) A - (Av) k) .
\]

Since \( A \) is arbitrary, it follows that \( u \) and \( v \) must be multiples of \( k \).

If \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \) is even, we obtain the condition

\[
\{ [A, \gamma^5 k] , \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \} = 0 .
\]

This condition is obviously satisfied if \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \) is a scalar or a pseudoscalar. Writing the bilinear component of \( \hat{P}_\varepsilon(k) \) in the form \( F_{ij} \gamma^i \gamma^j \) with an anti-symmetric tensor field \( F \), we get the condition

\[
0 = \{ [A, \gamma^5 k] , F_{ij} \gamma^i \gamma^j \} = 2F_{ij} k^i [A, \gamma^j] - 2F_{ij} A^i [\gamma^j, \gamma^i] .
\]

Since \( A \) is arbitrary, it follows that \( F = 0 \), concluding the proof.
The step from (A.23) to our the stronger assumption (A.2) could be justified by the assumption that the image of $P^e$ should be negative definite or neutral, and furthermore by assuming that without chiral asymmetry the matrix $\gamma^5$ is absent, whereas the chiral asymmetry is then introduced simply by multiplying with $\chi_L$ or $\chi_R$. We finally remark that in [5, Appendix D], the condition (A.18) is analyzed for $B$ a scalar potential to conclude that $\tilde{P}^e(k)$ should commute with the Dirac operator (see [5 eq. (D.16) and eq. (D.17)]). This is consistent with our ansatz (A.5), which is even a solution of the Dirac equation (A.11). However, we here preferred to avoid working with scalar potentials, which do not seem crucial for physically realistic models.

We next consider instead of (A.15) a general potential $B_q$, which may have off-diagonal terms in the direct summands. Then (A.14) can be evaluated similar as in the computation after (A.15), but the calculation is a bit more complicated. Therefore, we first compute the integral of the first summand in (A.14),

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \ d\mu \ s_{m_a+\mu}(k+q) \ (B_q)_b^a \ p_{m_b+\mu}(k) \ (\tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k)$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \ d\mu \ \epsilon(m_b+\mu) \ \frac{PP}{(k+q)^2-(m_a+\mu)^2} \ \delta(k^2-(m_b+\mu)^2) \times (k+\not{q}+m_a+\mu) \ (B_q)_b^a \ (k+m_b+\mu) \ (\tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k)$$

$$= \sum_{\mu=\pm|k|-m_b} \ \frac{1}{m_b+\mu} \ \mathcal{B}_b^a \ (\tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k), \quad (A.24)$$

where we set

$$\mathcal{B}_b^a = \frac{1}{2} \ PP \left( \frac{(k+\not{q}+m_a+\mu) \ (B_q)_b^a \ (k+m_b+\mu)}{2kq+q^2-(m_a^2-m_b^2)-2\mu(m_a-m_b)} \right) \quad (A.25)$$

and $|k| = \sqrt{k^2}$ (note that, in view of our assumption (A.6), the factor $(\tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k)$ guarantees that the above expression vanishes if $k^2 < 0$). Treating the second summand in (A.14) similarly, we obtain

$$(\Delta \tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k+q,k) = \sum_{\mu=\pm|k+q|-m_a} \ \frac{(\tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k+q)}{m_a+\mu} \ \mathcal{B}_b^a - \sum_{\mu=\pm|k|-m_b} \ \mathcal{B}_b^a \ (\tilde{P}^e)_b^a(k) \quad (A.26)$$

This formula is rather involved, but fortunately we do not need to enter a detailed analysis. It suffices to observe that (A.25) has poles in $q$, which lead to singularities of (A.24). Thus the only way to satisfy the condition (A.17) is to arrange that contributions of the first and second expression on the right of (A.26) cancel each other. In view of (A.5), the first expression involves $d_q(k+q)$, whereas in the second expression the term $d_b(k)$ appears. This shows that in order to get the required cancellations, the functions $d_a$ and $d_b$ must coincide. Using the notion introduced on page 82, we conclude that $B$ may describe an interaction of Dirac seas only if they are regularized in the same way. An interaction of Dirac seas with different regularization, however, is prohibited by the causality condition for the light-cone expansion. For brevity, we also say that the interaction must be regularity compatible.

A.4. The Causal Perturbation Expansion with Regularization. We are now ready to perform the causal perturbation expansion. In [11, Section 5], the unitary perturbation flow is introduced in terms of an operator product expansion. Replacing the Green’s functions and fundamental solutions in this expansion by the corresponding
operators of the free Dirac equation (A.11), we can write the operator $U(\mathcal{B}) \tilde{P}^\varepsilon U(\mathcal{B})^{-1}$ as a series of operator products of the form

$$Z := C_1 \mathcal{B} \cdots \mathcal{B} C_p \mathcal{B} \tilde{P}^\varepsilon \mathcal{B} C_{p+1} \mathcal{B} \cdots \mathcal{B} C_k ,$$

where the factors $C_l$ are the Green’s functions or fundamental solutions of the free Dirac equation (A.11). The operators $C_l$ are diagonal in momentum space, whereas the potential $\mathcal{B}$ varies on the macroscopic scale and thus changes the momentum only on the scale $\ell^{-1}_{\text{macro}}$. Thus all the factors $C_l$ will be evaluated at the same momentum $p$, up to errors of the order $\ell^{-1}_{\text{macro}}$. We refer to this momentum $p$, determined only up to summands of the order $\ell^{-1}_{\text{macro}}$ as the considered momentum scale. In view of the regularity assumptions on the functions $d$ and $m$ in (A.10), we may replace them by the constants $d(p)$ and $m(p)$, making an error of the order (A.22). This evaluation of the regularization functions is referred to as the fixing of the momentum scale, and we indicate it symbolically by $|_{\text{scale } p}$. Since $\mathcal{B}$ is regularity compatible, we may then commute the constant matrix $d$ to the left. Moreover, we can apply the causality compatibility condition (A.20) together with the form of $X$ in (A.5) and (A.2) to also commute the chiral asymmetry matrix $X$ to the left. We thus obtain the expansion

$$U(\mathcal{B}) \tilde{P}^\varepsilon U(\mathcal{B})^{-1} |_{\text{scale } p} = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{\alpha=0}^{\alpha_{\text{max }}(k)} c_\alpha X d C_{1,\alpha} \mathcal{B} C_{2,\alpha} \mathcal{B} \cdots \mathcal{B} C_{k+1,\alpha} |_{\text{scale } p} + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}),$$

where we set

$$X = \bigoplus_{\ell=1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} X_{\ell} \quad \text{and} \quad d = \bigoplus_{\ell=1}^{\ell_{\text{max}}} d_{\ell}(p),$$

and $c_\alpha$ are combinatorial factors. Here the combinatorics of the operator products coincides precisely with that of the causal perturbation expansion for the fermionic projector in [11, Theorem 4.1].

A.5. The Behavior under Gauge Transformations. In order to analyze the behavior of the above expansion under $U(1)$-gauge transformations, we consider the case of a pure gauge potential, i.e. $\mathcal{B} = \phi \Lambda$ with a real-valued function $\Lambda$. Then the gauge invariance of the causal perturbation expansion yields

$$U(\mathcal{B}) \tilde{P}^\varepsilon U(\mathcal{B})^{-1} |_{\text{scale } p} = (e^{i\Lambda} \tilde{P}^\varepsilon e^{-i\Lambda}) |_{\text{scale } p} + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}).$$

According to (A.12), we obtain $\tilde{P}^{\text{aux}}$ by applying with $V_{\text{shift}}$ and $V_{\text{shear}}$. The transformation $V_{\text{shift}}$ is a subtle point which requires a detailed explanation. We first consider its action on a multiplication operator in momentum space $M(k)$. Then, according to the definition (A.3),

$$(V_{\text{shift}} M V_{\text{shift}}^{-1} \psi(k)) = (M V_{\text{shift}}^{-1} \psi) (v_{\text{shift}}(k)) = M(v_{\text{shift}}(k)) (V_{\text{shift}}^{-1} \psi)(v_{\text{shift}}(k)) = M(v_{\text{shift}}(k)) \psi(k)$$

so that the transformation again yields a multiplication operator, but with a transformed argument. To derive the transformation law for multiplication operators in position space, we first let $f = e^{-iqx}$ be the operator of multiplication by a plane
wave. Then
\[
(V_{\text{shift}} f V_{\text{shift}}^{-1}(\psi))(k) = (f V_{\text{shift}}^{-1}(\psi))(v_{\text{shift}}(k)) \\
= (V_{\text{shift}}^{-1}(\psi))(v_{\text{shift}}(k) - q) = \psi\left(v_{\text{shift}}^{-1}(v_{\text{shift}}(k) - q)\right).
\]

This can be simplified further if we assume that the momentum \( q \sim \ell^{-1}_{\text{macro}} \) is macroscopic. Namely, the scaling of the function \( v_{\text{shift}} \) in (A.10) allows us to expand in a Taylor series in \( q \),
\[
(V_{\text{shift}} f V_{\text{shift}}^{-1}(\psi))(k) = \psi\left(k - Dv_{\text{shift}}^{-1}|_{v_{\text{shift}}(k)} q\right) + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}).
\]
Thus \( V_{\text{shift}} f V_{\text{shift}}^{-1} \) is again a multiplication operator in position space, but now corresponding to the new momentum
\[
L(k) q \quad \text{with} \quad L(k) := Dv_{\text{shift}}^{-1}|_{v_{\text{shift}}(k)}.
\]
Again in view of the regularity assumptions (A.10), when fixing the momentum scale we may replace the argument \( k \) by \( p \), i.e.
\[
V_{\text{shift}} e^{-i q x} V_{\text{shift}}^{-1}|_{\text{scale } p} = e^{-i(L(p)q) x} + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}).
\]
Using the relation \( (L(p)q)x = q L(p)^*x \), we can rewrite this transformation law simply as a linear transformation of the space-time coordinates. Then the transformation law generalizes by linearity to a general multiplication operator by a function \( f \) which varies on the macroscopic scale, i.e.
\[
V_{\text{shift}} f(x) V_{\text{shift}}^{-1}|_{\text{scale } p} = f(L(p)^*x) + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}).
\] (A.30)

With (A.29) and (A.30), we can transform (A.28) to the required form (A.12). Using that \( V_{\text{shear}} \) commutes with scalar and macroscopic multiplication operators (again up to higher orders in \( \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}} \)), we obtain in view of (A.4)
\[
P^\varepsilon(x, y)|_{\text{scale } p} = e^{i\Lambda(L(p)^*x)} P^\varepsilon(x, y) e^{-i\Lambda(L(p)^*y)} + (\text{higher orders in } \varepsilon/\ell_{\text{macro}}).
\] (A.31)
Except for the factors \( L(p)^* \), this formula describes the usual behavior of the fermionic projector under gauge transformations. In particular, if we do not consider general surface states and \( V_{\text{shift}} = 1 \), then our perturbation expansion is gauge invariant. However, if we consider general surface states described by a non-trivial operator \( V_{\text{shift}} \), then the matrix \( L \) will in general not be the identity, and the transformation law (A.31) violates gauge invariance.

Our method to recover gauge invariance is to replace the gauge potential \( A \) by a more general operator \( \tilde{A} \), which in momentum space has the form
\[
\tilde{A}\left(p + \frac{q}{2}, p - \frac{q}{2}\right) := \tilde{A}(L(p)^{-1}q),
\] (A.32)
where \( \tilde{A} \) is the Fourier transform of the classical potential to be used when no regularization is present. In the case \( A = \partial \Lambda \) of a pure gauge field and fixing the momentum scale, we then find that \( \tilde{A} \) coincides with the multiplication operator \( \tilde{A}(\left((L(p)^*)^{-1}x\right)) \), just compensating the factors \( L(p)^* \) in (A.31). In view of the regularity assumptions (A.10), the matrix \( L \) scales in powers of the regularization length. Thus \( \tilde{A} \) is a nonlocal operator, but only on the microscopic scale \( \varepsilon \). On the macroscopic scale, however, it coincides with the classical local potential. We also point out that the compatibility conditions worked out in Section A.3 under the assumption that \( \mathcal{B} \) is a multiplication operator are valid just as well for the nonlocal potential (A.32), because
after fixing the momentum scale, $A$ reduces to a multiplication operator, so that our previous considerations again apply.

A.6. The Regularized Light-Cone Expansion. We are now in the position to perform the light-cone expansion. Our starting point is the operator product expansion (A.27). We choose $B$ to be the Fourier transform of a general multiplication or differential operator and introduce $\hat{B}$ in analogy to (A.32) as a non-local operator. After fixing the momentum scale, this operator reduces again to a multiplication or differential operator. Then the light-cone expansion can be performed exactly as described in [3] and [5, §2.5]. Finally, one can transform the obtained formulas with $V_{\text{shift}}$ and $V_{\text{shear}}$ (again using the rules (A.29) and (A.30)). Since the resulting line integrals do not depend on the momentum scale, the regularization only affects the factors $T^{(n)}$. The condition that $B$ should be regularity compatible can be described by the parameters $\tau^\text{reg}_i$. We thus obtain the formalism described in §2.5 and §2.6.

We finally compare our constructions with those in [5, Appendix D]. Clearly, the constructions here are much more general because they apply to any order in perturbation theory and may involve a chiral asymmetry. Moreover, the momentum shift operator $V_{\text{shift}}$ makes it possible to describe general surface states, and also we allow for a large shear of the surface states (whereas in [5, Appendix D] we always assumed the shear to be small). Nevertheless, the basic idea that in order to preserve the gauge invariance in the presence of a regularization, one should replace the classical potentials by operators which are nonlocal on the microscopic scale already appeared in [5, Appendix D] (see the explanation after [5, eq. (D.26)]). Thus [5, Appendix D] can be regarded as a technical and conceptual preparation which is superseded by the constructions given here.
References

[1] F. Finster, *The continuum limit of a fermion system involving leptons and quarks: Strong, electroweak and gravitational interactions*, in preparation.

[2] ______, *Light-cone expansion of the Dirac sea with light cone integrals*, arXiv:funct-an/9707003 unpiblished preprint (1997).

[3] ______, *Light-cone expansion of the Dirac sea to first order in the external potential*, arXiv:hep-th/9707128, Michigan Math. J. 46 (1999), no. 2, 377–408.

[4] ______, *Light-cone expansion of the Dirac sea in the presence of chiral and scalar potentials*, arXiv:hep-th/9809019, J. Math. Phys. 41 (2000), no. 10, 6689–6746.

[5] ______, *The Principle of the Fermionic Projector*, hep-th/0001048, J. Math. Phys. 41 (2000), no. 10, 6689–6746.

[6] ______, *A variational principle in discrete space-time: Existence of minimizers*, arXiv:math-ph/0503069, Calc. Var. Partial Differential Equations 29 (2007), no. 4, 431–453.

[7] ______, *On the regularized fermionic projector of the vacuum*, arXiv:math-ph/0612003, J. Math. Phys. 49 (2008), no. 3, 032304, 60.

[8] ______, *An action principle for an interacting fermion system and its analysis in the continuum limit*, arXiv:0908.1542 [math-ph] (2009).

[9] ______, *Causal variational principles on measure spaces*, arXiv:0811.2666 [math-ph], J. Reine Angew. Math. 646 (2010), 141–194.

[10] ______, *A formulation of quantum field theory realizing a sea of interacting Dirac particles*, arXiv:0911.2102 [hep-th], Lett. Math. Phys. 97 (2011), no. 2, 165–183.

[11] F. Finster and A. Grotz, *The causal perturbation expansion revisited: Rescaling the interacting Dirac sea*, arXiv:0901.0331 [math-ph], J. Math. Phys. 51 (2010), 072301.

[12] ______, *A Lorentzian quantum geometry*, arXiv:1007.2020 [math-ph], Adv. Theor. Math. Phys. 16 (2012), no. 4, 1197–1290.

[13] F. Finster and S. Hloh, *An action principle for the masses of Dirac particles*, arXiv:0712.0678 [math-ph], Adv. Theor. Math. Phys. 13 (2009), no. 6, 1653–1711.

[14] F. Finster, J. Kleiner, and J.-H. Treude, *An introduction to the fermionic projector and causal fermion systems*, in preparation.

[15] F. Finster and C. Röken, *The fermionic projector in an external potential: Nonperturbative construction and the Hadamard property*, in preparation.

[16] F. Finster and J. Tolksdorf, *Perturbative description of the fermionic projector: Normalization, causality and Furry’s theorem*, arXiv:1401.4353 [math-ph], J. Math. Phys. 55 (2014), no. 5, 052301.

[17] A. Grotz, *A Lorentzian quantum geometry*, Dissertation Universität Regensburg, urn:nbn:de:bvb:355-epub-231289, 2011.
Notation Index

\(P(x, y)\) – kernel of fermionic projector, [2]
\(A_{xy}\) – corresponding closed chain, [2]
\(\mathcal{L}[A_{xy}]\) – causal Lagrangian, [2]
\(|.|\) – spectral weight, [2]
\(S[P]\) – causal action, [2]
\(\mathcal{T}[P]\) – constraint, [2]
\((M, \langle \ldots , \ldots \rangle)\) – Minkowski space, [2]
\(S_{\mu}[P]\) – auxiliary action, [2]
\(\mu\) – Lagrange multiplier, [2]
\(P_{N}(x, y)\) – vacuum fermionic projector in neutrino sector, [2]
\(P_{C}(x, y)\) – vacuum fermionic projector in charged sector, [2]
\(m_{\beta}\) – masses of charged fermions, [3]
\(P_{m}\) – vacuum Dirac sea of mass \(m\), [3]
\(\tilde{\mu}\) – real lightlike vector in \(\iota\)-formalism, [21]
\(\tilde{P}_{m}\) – lightlike component of vacuum fermionic projector in \(\iota\)-formalism, [21]
l\(_{0}(n)\) – vector describing regularization in \(\iota\)-formalism, [21]
\(\lambda^{xy}_{ncs}\) – eigenvalues of closed chain, [24]
\(F^{(n)}_{ncs}\) – corresponding spectral projectors, [24]
\(L^{(n)}_{[p]} = T^{(n)}_{[p]} + \tau_{\text{reg}} T^{(n)}_{[R,p]}/3\), [25]
\(U_{\alpha}\) – unitary matrix involving gauge phases, [26]
\(\text{Pexp}, \text{Pe}\) – ordered exponential, [26] [55]
\(A_{L}\) – left-handed gauge potential, [29] [55]
\(A_{N}\) – right-handed potential in neutrino sector, [29] [54] [56]
\(A_{C}\) – right-handed potential in charged sector, [29] [54] [56]
\(p_{\text{reg}}\) – determines scaling \(\tau_{\text{reg}} = (m\varepsilon)^{p_{\text{reg}}}\), [30]
\(\nu_{nc}\) – eigenvalues of matrix involving phases, [31]
\(I_{nc}\) – corresponding spectral projectors, [31]
\(\lambda_{\pm}\) – eigenvalues of closed chain in vacuum, [31]
\(T^{(n)}_{[R,p]}\) – describes shear states, [16]
\(z^{(n)}_{0}\) – factor for contraction rules, [17]
\(P_{\text{aux}}\) – auxiliary fermionic projector, [18]
\(X\) – chiral asymmetry matrix, [18]
\(mY\) – mass matrix, [18]
\(\tau_{\text{reg}}\) – dimensionless parameter for high-energy states, [18] [50]
\(t\) – distribution composed of vacuum Dirac seas, [18]
\(\tilde{t}\) – corresponding object with interaction, [18]
\(\mathcal{B}\) – operator in Dirac equation, [18] [29] [74]
\(\cdot\) \(,\) \(,\) \(\wedge\) – denote the sectorial projection, [20]
\(\xi\) – vector \(y - x\), [5]
\(Q(x, y)\) – operator in EL equations, [5]
\(\langle .| . \rangle\) – inner product on wave functions, [6]
\(\lambda_{i}\) – eigenvalues of the closed chain, [10]
\(T_{m^{2}}(x, y)\) – Fourier transform of lower mass shell, [14]
\(T_{[p]}^{(n)}\) – regularized term of mass expansion, [15]
\(T_{(p)}^{(n)}\) – ordinary shear term, [15]
\(c_{\text{reg}}\) – regularization parameter, [16]
\(\text{deg}\) – degree on light cone, [16]
\(\delta\) – length scale of shear and general surface states, [16]
\(T_{[R,p]}^{(n)}\) – describes mass expansion of general surface states, [16]
$F_{\pm}$ – corresponding spectral projectors, 31

$\Delta Q(x, y)$ – operator $Q$ to degree four on light cone, 32

$\mathcal{K}_{nc}$ – matrices entering the EL equations to degree four, 33

$\mathcal{K}_{\epsilon}$ – matrices entering the EL equations to degree four, 33

$Q_{\epsilon}$ – matrices entering the EL equations to degree four, 33

$o(|\xi|^2)$ – order at the origin, 37

$j_{\epsilon}$ – bosonic current, 37

$J_{\epsilon}$ – Dirac current, 37

$\mathcal{J}_{\epsilon}$ – matrix composed of current and mass terms, 37

$U(k)$ – homogeneous transformation, 40

$\Omega$ – absolute value of energy, 40

$Z(k)$ – generator of homogeneous transformation, 40

$L(k), R(k)$ – chiral components of $Z(k)$, 40

$S_0, S_2$ – signature matrices, 43

$U(x, y)$ – microlocal chiral transformation, 46

$\mathcal{D}_{\text{even}}, \mathcal{D}_{\text{odd}}$ – even and odd components of Dirac operator, 48

$\mathcal{D}_{\text{\text{even}}}^{\text{flip}}$ – even component with flipped chirality, 48

$e_1, \ldots, e_6$ – orthonormal basis, 49

$P^{(0)}(x, y), A^{(0)}_{xy}, \gamma^{(0)}_{\text{ncs}}$ – objects of the vacuum, 52

$M^{(l)}_{n}$ – short notation for factors $T^{(l)}_{(0)}$ or $L^{(l)}_{(0)}$, 60

$\text{Symm}(\mathbb{C}^n)$ – Hermitian $n \times n$-matrices, 65

$\mathfrak{S}_n = \text{Symm}(\mathbb{C}^6) \oplus \text{Symm}(\mathbb{C}^6)$ – left- and right-handed matrices, 65

$\hat{\cdot}$ – denotes sectorial projection, 66

$\mathcal{G}$ – dynamical gauge group, 66

$\mathfrak{g}$ – dynamical gauge algebra, 66

$S_{\text{eff}}$ – effective action, 67

$\hat{\mathcal{S}}_{\text{eff}}$ – effective action, 68

$\hat{\pi}$ – sectorial projection operator, 68

$\Pi_{\tau}$ – sectorial projection with modified right-handed neutrino coupling, 69

$V_{\text{shift}}, V_{\text{shear}}$ – operators in the regularized causal perturbation theory, 81
Subject Index

$\iota$-formalism, 21

action
  auxiliary, 2
  causal, 2
  effective, 64

bilinear logarithmic term, 54

causal perturbation theory, 18
causality compatibility condition, 19
chiral asymmetry matrix, 18
chiral cancellation, 51
contraction rule, 17
cosmological constant, 79
curvature term, 52
degree, 16
effective Lagrangian
  Dirac, 68
  Einstein-Hilbert, 67
  Yang-Mills, 75
Einstein equations, 4, 79
energy-momentum term, 51
evaluation on the light cone
  pointwise, 30
  weak, 16
fermionic projector
  auxiliary, 17
  of the vacuum, 2
field tensor term, 60
gauge algebra
  dynamical, 66
gauge field equations, 75
gauge group
  dynamical, 66
gauge potential
  dynamical, 66
general surface state, 10
integration-by-parts rule, 17
light-cone expansion, 18
Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata (MNS) matrix, 28
mass expansion, 11
mass matrix, 18
massive state, 13
neutrino
  chiral, 3
  massive, 3
null state, 13
order
  at the origin, 37
partial trace, 20
regularization
  macroscopic away from light cone, 6
  naive, 5
  spherically symmetric, 9
regularization parameter, 16
sector
  charged, 3
  neutrino, 3
sectorial projection, 20
shear contribution
  by the microlocal chiral transformation, 48
shear state, 12
simple fraction, 16
singular mass limit, 6
state stability, 6
transformation of the fermionic projector
  microlocal chiral, 39
Fakultät für Mathematik, Universität Regensburg, D-93040 Regensburg, Germany
E-mail address: finster@ur.de